

Struggling to Survive with Regression Power in the Primordial Saint Sect

[1,519 words]

Chapter 301: A Deal with Chong Guang

The Sword-Hiding Villa, inside the loft.

In the Sword-Hiding Villa, within a loft.

Lü Yang sat upright on a meditation cushion, his body radiating brilliance. The light eventually converged upon him, transforming into resplendent golden patterns that etched themselves onto his skin and flesh.

Innate Divine Ability, **【Stubborn Gold Duke】** !

This ability was not acquired through refining the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend energies but was instead simulated in advance using the method-holding power of the **【Calamity Wave】** .

“ **【Shen Metal】** is a dull metal that requires tempering by fire to become a sword or halberd. This energy resides in the Earth Fiend position and, along with **【Geng Metal】** , belongs to the yang attribute metals. Its light is extremely sharp and difficult to destroy. When applied to the dharma body, it becomes impervious to blades, axes, and even lightning strikes. Hence, it is called **【Stubborn Gold Duke】** .”

Boom!

In the next moment, as the innate divine ability descended, Lü Yang's aura surged, forcefully breaking through the shackles of the early Foundation Establishment stage and advancing directly to the mid Foundation Establishment stage!

“Finally, some achievement.”

Lü Yang opened his eyes and nodded in satisfaction. After three years, his immortal spirit body had finally reached perfection in the early stage, and his method-holding power could now rival that of the mid Foundation Establishment stage.

Reflecting on the past, these three years had indeed been arduous.

'After leaving Gantang Dao, I immediately destroyed my clone and buried all the Geng Metal spiritual items I had gathered, not daring to take them, fearing they would implicate my main body.'

Lü Yang had always been decisive, directly abandoning all the gains from the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting and spending three years collecting Geng Metal spiritual items anew. Only recently did he complete the final step of nurturing his immortal spirit body in the early Foundation Establishment stage. At the same time, he confirmed something that greatly relieved him:

'That "Ang Xiao" is probably not free either.'

If his guess was correct, Ang Xiao was likely unable to leave the Underworld!

'In the previous life, the reason he could roam like a ghost was largely because he had refined the karmic sin that resulted from Uncle Chong Guang's failed pursuit of gold.'

Just like Lü Yang now, having a clone naturally allowed one to traverse the world.

However, at this point in time, Ang Xiao clearly did not have such means, so his perception of the present world was limited, certainly not omniscient.

Otherwise, why would the Qing Chen Fairy dare to challenge him in the previous life?

Apart from Qing Chen Fairy's boldness and extraordinary strength, part of the reason was also the significant restrictions Ang Xiao faced in the Underworld.

Besides this, there was another matter that exceeded Lü Yang's expectations.

That was the Jiangnan Mass Grave.

'When I was in the Primordial Saint Sect, less than a month after the restart, the Sword Pavilion launched an attack on the Jiangnan Mass Grave, causing the price of substitute Yin puppets to skyrocket.'

'However, in this life, perhaps due to the letter I sent to Uncle Chong Guang as a warning, the Primordial Saint Sect strengthened its defenses at the Jiangnan Mass Grave. As a result, the Sword Pavilion has yet to act, and there seem to be other considerations. It's been three years, and still, no battle has occurred.'

This was also a good thing.

After all, if the battle had started too early, it would have been difficult for him to get a share. Now that he had returned to the mid Foundation Establishment stage, he had a bit more qualification to participate.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang finally took out a flying communication spirit book.

This was paired with the one he had sent to the Primordial Saint Sect; the two could sense each other and communicate directly through writing.

'Over the past three years, Uncle Chong Guang has tried to contact me more than once.'

'It seems he is quite curious about me.'

Lü Yang did not respond immediately but waited for three years. On one hand, it was because his cultivation was not yet complete; on the other hand, it was also to deliberately whet the appetite.

What comes easily is not cherished.

Only by playing hard to get can one maintain the initiative.

That said, Lü Yang did not immediately activate the spirit book in his hand. Instead, with a thought, his divine sense locked onto a mortal city thousands of miles away.

Then he randomly selected a Qi Refining rogue cultivator in the city.

He then sent the spirit book to the rogue cultivator and activated the 【Puppet on Strings】 to control him, thereby creating a causal firewall.

'Although Uncle Chong Guang is considered relatively moral in the Primordial Saint Sect, it's only relative. Moreover, he also has a True Person backing him! Who knows if he's just waiting for me to make contact, so that the Feixue True Person can immediately break through the void and capture me for instant refinement.'

In this regard, Lü Yang had to admit that the 【Puppet on Strings】 was truly useful.

However, it wasn't because of its 【Hypnosis】 effect, as that was essentially a tool for bullying lower realms.

The key was in severing causality.

No one could trace Lü Yang, the puppeteer, through the causality of the 【Puppet on Strings】 , which was why he could successfully hide behind the scenes.

Otherwise, when he encountered Ang Xiao three years ago, he would have been forced to restart.

'It's all thanks to the cheat!'

Lü Yang sighed, then, through the firewall of the 【Puppet on Strings】 , manipulated the Qi Refining rogue cultivator to activate the flying communication spirit book.

Almost simultaneously.

At the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

Chong Guang, who had been meditating, suddenly opened his eyes and looked at the flying communication that had been silent for three years, showing a hint of interest.

Finally couldn't hold back?

In the next moment, he waved his sleeve, accepting Lü Yang's communication request, and immediately began to deduce causality through the connection between the spirit books!

The result, naturally, was nothing.

Then, a message appeared before his eyes through the spirit book:

【I know a secret that not only concerns the cultivation of “Overturning Lamp Flame” but also relates to the secret of that “Heavenly Fortune Bright Light True Person.” Are you interested?】

Chong Guang raised his eyebrows slightly upon seeing this.

Just this statement alone told him that the other party was not an ordinary person, as not everyone knew the title 【Heavenly Fortune Bright Light True Person】 .

After a moment of thought, he waved his hand and wrote four words:

【What secret?】

Soon, a reply came:

【I want a superior-grade spiritual treasure!】

Chong Guang's expression immediately became peculiar. He stroked his chin with interest. Demanding benefits upfront—could this person be a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect?

【I naturally have superior-grade spiritual treasures, but how do I give them to you?】

【That's your problem to solve. However, my secret involves a fragment of a cave heaven left behind after the fall of that “Heavenly Fortune Bright Light True Person.”】

“ ... ”

Chong Guang's expression grew more solemn. In the next moment, a graceful figure appeared in the hall. With a wave of her hand, the spirit book fell into her grasp.

“Trouble the True Person.”

Only then did Chong Guang smile. The person holding the spirit book was none other than the Qing Chen Fairy, who had just exited seclusion upon receiving Chong Guang's message!

The Qing Chen Fairy did not deduce causality but instead violently traced the connection between the two spirit books. In an instant, she locked onto a location in Jiangnan, then reached out—

In a flash! The void shattered, and a figure was directly pulled over from afar!

However, upon seeing the person, both of them let out a soft exclamation.

Their gazes fell upon the figure, who turned out to be none other than the Qi Refining rogue cultivator randomly selected and controlled by Lü Yang using the 【Puppet on Strings】 .

‘As expected, they played dirty... Scoundrels!’

Far away in Jiangnan, Lü Yang's main body shook his head helplessly, feeling no emotional fluctuation. He had anticipated that caution would ensure longevity. The Primordial Saint Sect's scoundrels had no sense of martial ethics!

Especially Chong Guang—utterly absurd!

It was just a negotiation, yet he directly invited the Qing Chen Fairy to act. If not for his prior vigilance, he would have been forced to restart by now!

“It seems... Fellow Daoist prefers face-to-face communication?”

Lü Yang, through the 【Puppet on Strings】 , smiled slightly at Chong Guang. But in the next second, he felt a mighty force descend upon the rogue cultivator's body.

Without a word, they directly performed a soul search!

However, Lü Yang remained calm, as the rogue cultivator's memories had no connection to him. No matter how they searched, they would find nothing.

After a long time, the mighty force dissipated.

The Qing Chen Fairy's beautiful eyes sparkled, clearly intrigued by Lü Yang, with a look as if she wished to dissect him directly.

Seeing this, Lü Yang spread his hands: “Can we talk now?”

As his words fell, the True Person Chong Guang finally smiled, then looked deeply at Lü Yang: “Interesting... It seems Fellow Daoist is indeed a True Person of our Primordial Saint Sect.”

Moreover, judging by this demeanor, he was likely not an ordinary True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 302 : It Had to Be a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect!

[1,261 words]

Chapter 302: It Had to Be a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect!

At the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, within the Sacred Fire Cliff.

Chong Guang sat upright, watching Lü Yang manipulate a Qi Refining rogue cultivator using the 【String Puppet】 technique. Only then did he adopt a somewhat peer-level attitude.

“Fellow Daoist seeks a superior-grade spiritual treasure?”

“May the Acting Sect Master see clearly.”

Lü Yang nodded. Having decisively abandoned the harvest from the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting, his plan to have a celestial fetus clone roam the world had yet to materialize.

Unfortunately, both the Yun Clan's ancestor and True Person Xiuxin were penniless—one from a declining family, the other a regular guest elder—neither carried a superior-grade spiritual treasure. Coupled with the perils in Jiangnan, Lü Yang cautiously considered seeking assistance from the familiar Primordial Saint Sect.

‘Quite courteous.’

Chong Guang's expression shifted. Lü Yang's demeanor was solemn, addressing him as Acting Sect Master, clearly positioning himself as a loyal subject of the Primordial Saint Sect.

However, Chong Guang didn't believe such claims.

A loyal subject of the Primordial Saint Sect?

What a joke. Those words don't belong together. Most likely, it's just a stance to gain favor.

“I can agree to this, Fellow Daoist.”

Chong Guang's expression remained unchanged as he calmly said, “But how can you assure me that you won't go back on your word after receiving my favor?”

Chong Guang was always straightforward. Since Lü Yang had demonstrated methods even True Persons found hard to trace, he candidly voiced his concerns. This blend of cunning and magnanimity was something many True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect lacked.

Therefore, Lü Yang responded just as straightforwardly, “Then I can tell the Acting Sect Master first.”

Upon hearing this, Chong Guang squinted his eyes, somewhat surprised, “Seems I've misjudged you. Aren't you afraid I'll break my promise?”

“Of course not.”

Lü Yang shook his head, “After all, it's just a piece of information. If the Acting Sect Master breaks his word over this, I'll see his true nature—still a gain.”

“. Hahaha!”

As the words fell, Chong Guang burst into laughter, his gaze towards Lü Yang showing appreciation for the first time, feeling a strong rapport.

Who exactly is this person?

That said, he didn't pretend to be magnanimous by declining the offer but instead said with a half-smile, “Then please, Fellow Daoist, speak first.”

Feigning or truly magnanimous?

Facing Chong Guang's scrutiny, Lü Yang calmly said, “The fragment of the cave heaven the Acting Sect Master seeks lies beneath the sea in Jiangnan's Gantang Dao.”

As Lü Yang finished speaking, Chong Guang's eyebrows slightly raised. His hand, hidden in his sleeve, began calculating. Although he didn't get a direct result, he sensed a trace of causality. Looking at True Person Qingcheng Feixue, he saw her subtly nod.

'It's real!'

While Jiangnan was obscure to Chong Guang, it wasn't so to True Person Qingcheng Feixue. If she had no prior knowledge, she might have overlooked it.

However, now that Lü Yang had pointed out the causality.

If True Person Qingcheng Feixue still couldn't detect the presence of the cave heaven fragment, she'd be too incompetent—and she clearly wasn't.

'Indeed, there are traces of a residual cave heaven.'

'Seems to have been preserved accidentally, but it's quite coincidental. I didn't investigate further to avoid alerting other True Persons.'

After all, Jiangnan was the territory of the Sword Pavilion. As a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect, minor actions in Jiangnan were acceptable. With deliberate concealment, she wouldn't be discovered. But if she caused a commotion, it would undoubtedly attract the attention of the Sword Pavilion's True Persons. Hence, True Person Qingcheng Feixue refrained from alarming anyone.

Even so, it was enough for Chong Guang to see Lü Yang in a new light.

After exchanging information with True Person Qingcheng Feixue, Chong Guang looked at Lü Yang again, curious, "How did you discover that cave heaven fragment?"

"I forgot," Lü Yang grinned, "Just like the Acting Sect Master sometimes forgets things."

Where's my benefit!?

Upon hearing this, Chong Guang laughed, then waved his hand. A crimson sword light immediately descended into the hall, which he personally handed to Lü Yang.

"This is a rare gem among superior-grade spiritual treasures," Chong Guang said solemnly, "I present this to Fellow Daoist in exchange for another piece of information."

Lü Yang looked at the crimson magical sword Chong Guang handed over, feeling a bit speechless.

It was the 【Abhī Sword】 !

'Was this accidental? Or intentional?'

'Is he assuming I don't know the issues with the 【Abhī Sword】 ? This item is bait left by the Blood Demon True Person, specifically to lure scapegoats!'

However, the next moment, he realized.

'Wait. He's testing whether I know the lore of the 【Abhī Sword】 , trying to gauge my standing in the Primordial Saint Sect and uncover my true identity?'

The Blood Demon True Person was a veteran in the Primordial Saint Sect, with a unique situation. With Daoist Hong Yun's help, he faked his death and lived for five thousand years, outlasting some True Persons. As a result, few in the current Primordial Saint Sect knew about the Blood Demon True Person.

'This might be a significant watershed!'

'Knowing or not indicates one's standing and identity in the Primordial Saint Sect.'

'If I reveal knowledge of the Blood Demon True Person, he might narrow down his suspicions and more easily uncover my true identity.'

But that's assuming I have a standing in the Primordial Saint Sect.

'Unfortunately, in this lifetime, I'm a bona fide member of the Sword Pavilion. These attempts will ultimately be futile; they won't uncover anything!'

Thinking this, Lü Yang calmly accepted the 【Abhī Sword】 .

Although it still bore the causality left by the Blood Demon True Person, he didn't mind.

After all, he now had the more handy 【Tribulation Wave】 and had long lost affection for the 【Abhī Sword】 , so he didn't plan to keep it.

'Once I bring it back, I'll melt it down to forge a celestial fetus clone!'

The transaction concluded satisfactorily, both parties pleased.

Afterward, True Person Qingcheng Feixue even personally escorted Lü Yang back to Jiangnan, then secretly observed from the sidelines.

Clearly, she intended to wait for the prey.

However, the cautious Lü Yang gave her no chance, never meeting his main body. Instead, he began forging a clone using the Abhī Sword on the spot.

From start to finish, the main body never appeared.

True Person Qingcheng Feixue waited for a long time but gained nothing. In the end, she could only pout, leaving a divine sense to reside there, while her main body returned to the Primordial Saint Sect.

“Chong Guang, can you guess who this person is?”

“Not sure.”

In the hall, Chong Guang rarely showed hesitation, “Judging by his reaction, he likely saw through my test but remained unfazed.”

“This suggests his cultivation is certainly not inferior to the Blood Demon True Person, and he has means to counter the Blood Demon True Person's tribulation substitution technique, with methods to resolve its causality. To possess such abilities, he must at least be a Great True Person, possibly at the Foundation Establishment peak, or if we think bolder—”

He might be a Golden Core True Person!

The words abruptly stopped; Chong Guang didn't continue. However, the implication was clear, and even True Person Qingcheng Feixue had similar suspicions.

“But these are secondary.”

At this point, Chong Guang rubbed his temples, somewhat troubled, “This mysterious fellow Daoist... indeed resembles a True Person of our Primordial Saint Sect, which makes things a bit tricky.”

“A cave heaven fragment... such valuable information, I suspect he might be playing both sides.”

“Turning around and selling the information to Hong Yun.”

Meanwhile, in another region north of the Yangtze.

“Hello, hello?”

Again using a Qi Refining rogue cultivator controlled by the 【String Puppet】 technique, Lü Yang stirred causality and transmitted a message, “Is Daoist Hong Yun there?”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,439 words]

Chapter 303: Repeated Maneuvers, Gaining from Both Sides

Compared to reaching out to Chong Guang, contacting Hong Yun required more effort from Lü Yang.

Of course, it wasn't truly difficult to make contact; as long as he could touch upon some of Hong Yun's core interests, there would be no need for him to appear in person—Hong Yun would come seeking him.

Lü Yang's method was straightforward: using the 【String Puppet】 to control a local Qi Refining rogue cultivator from Jiangbei, he then remotely influenced the karmic threads of Xiao Shiye. With such maneuvers, treating Xiao Shiye as bait, the Daoist Hong Yun would naturally be alarmed and come knocking.

Lü Yang's strategy aligned precisely with Chong Guang's suspicions.

Given the importance of the Cave Heaven fragment, how could Lü Yang possibly sell the information to just one party? After all, the greatest advantage of intelligence was its ability to be sold multiple times!

The next moment, the void cracked open.

Seeing this, Lü Yang's eyes lit up slightly: "Fellow Daoist..."

Boom!

Before he could finish speaking, the Daoist Hong Yun directly unleashed his magic power, slapping the Qi Refining rogue cultivator into a pulp. However, soon after, two more figures appeared:

"Fellow Daoist, don't you want to know..."

Before the first figure could finish speaking, the Daoist Hong Yun shattered it once again. Fortunately, the second figure continued: "...the whereabouts of your own Cave Heaven?"

Upon hearing this, the Daoist Hong Yun, who had initially arrived sensing someone tampering with Xiao Shiye's karmic threads and had casually killed the Qi Refining cultivator upon finding him, was momentarily stunned. Focusing his gaze, he then noticed the peculiar expressions on these "Qi Refining rogue cultivators."

"...Who are you?"

Glancing at the sky, the Daoist Hong Yun waved his sleeve, instantly disappearing with Lü Yang from the spot. Shortly after, a divine sense tore through the air.

“Whoosh!”

The immense divine sense swept across the scene like a storm scattering leaves, yet found nothing. Eventually, it coalesced into a cold, frosty silhouette.

【True Lord Qingcheng Feixue】 !

“What a pity... he escaped quickly.”

After all, the Daoist Hong Yun had once been a True Lord of the Primordial Saint Sect. Unless confronted face-to-face, even she would find it difficult to trace someone who was determined to hide.

At this thought, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue suddenly smiled charmingly, her beautiful eyes gleaming with interest: “Judging by this, could it be that the person is indeed selling the information to both sides and has come to negotiate with Hong Yun as well? That’s not unacceptable. If I lie in wait, perhaps I can capture him...”

Jiangbei, a remote mountain forest.

This place, nestled among towering mountains, was concealed by multiple layers of formations, each designed to obscure heavenly secrets, completely severing all karmic ties.

In the next moment, the void cracked open.

The Daoist Hong Yun, bringing along the Qi Refining rogue cultivator under Lü Yang’s control, stepped directly into the formation. Following Chong Guang’s example, he immediately initiated a soul search.

Truly an old member of the Primordial Saint Sect.

Lü Yang remained calm, having grown accustomed to such actions.

Only after the soul search yielded nothing did the Daoist Hong Yun begin to regard Lü Yang differently, asking, “Do you know the name of my Cave Heaven?”

This was the final test.

Without hesitation, Lü Yang replied, “ 【Changyao Baoguang Cave Heaven】 !”

Upon hearing this, the Daoist Hong Yun exhaled deeply. Anyone who could name this place was either an old member of the Primordial Saint Sect or had genuinely seen his Cave Heaven.

“What do you want?”

Clearly, the Daoist Hong Yun understood that there was no such thing as love or hate without reason in this world. Since Lü Yang had sought him out, he naturally desired some benefit.

Unlike Chong Guang, who, as the acting Sect Master of the Primordial Saint Sect, held significant influence and had room for maneuvering, the Daoist Hong Yun, having languished for five thousand years, was already cornered.

Therefore, his attitude was refreshingly straightforward.

Seeing the Daoist Hong Yun’s decisiveness, Lü Yang also got straight to the point: “I want the half-true treasure you left in the Biyang Cultivation World and that innate Dao abomination!”

“...Who exactly are you?”

Upon hearing this, the Daoist Hong Yun’s expression grew more solemn, his brows furrowing. His arrangements in the Biyang Cultivation World should have been known to no one.

How had the information leaked?

The half-true treasure he left in the Biyang Cultivation World, the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 , was actually a failed strategy. He had planned to use it to feign holding the golden position.

However, the difficulty of feigning the golden position was exceedingly high. Even after using all the talents of the Biyang Cultivation World to refine it, the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 remained a half-true treasure, unable to fully transform into a true treasure. Its utility was limited to deducing divine abilities, which, while not critical, was at least not entirely useless.

Thus, when Lü Yang requested this half-true treasure, aside from being surprised at the leak of information, the Daoist Hong Yun felt little reluctance.

“But... how can I trust you?”

The Daoist Hong Yun sneered, “As for the Cave Heaven fragment you mentioned, do you think I’m unaware? Isn’t it just the one beneath the waters of Gantang Dao in Jiangnan!”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang's eyebrows raised slightly.

However, he quickly understood. In his previous life, since the Daoist Hong Yun had managed to return to the peak of the Foundation Establishment Realm and refine a blessed land, he must have found the Cave Heaven fragment.

It now seemed he had discovered some clues long ago.

But why hadn't he acted immediately?

With this thought, Lü Yang regained his composure and chuckled, "It seems fellow Daoist harbors suspicions, suspecting that the Cave Heaven fragment might be problematic?"

As expected!

No matter what, the Daoist Hong Yun was once a True Lord of the Primordial Saint Sect. How could he not understand that opportunities often came with pitfalls? The problem was, he had no choice!

"..."

After Lü Yang finished speaking, the Daoist Hong Yun, though wanting to refute, found himself speechless. This had indeed been his greatest concern recently.

However, the pressure from Chong Guang was immense. As the former master of 【Overturning Lamp Flame】, he could vaguely sense that its attention towards him was waning, gradually being usurped by Chong Guang. If this continued, he would truly be dethroned!

His options were limited.

Therefore, not long ago, he had resolved to make a trip to Jiangnan to retrieve the Cave Heaven fragment. Even if it was a poisoned bait, he had to swallow it!

Yet, Lü Yang's appearance changed his mind.

"What else do you know?"

Under the Daoist Hong Yun's gaze, Lü Yang directly imprinted a copy of the 『True Explanation of Observing the Void and Inner Heaven and Earth』 he had obtained from the Cave Heaven using his divine sense.

Although 【Ang Xiao】 had erased all memories of this from the Daoist Xiao Hai.

Lü Yang had taken advantage of the Daoist Xiao Hai's body to memorize the content. The Daoist Xiao Hai had forgotten, but what did that have to do with Lü Yang?

"This is...!?"

Upon seeing the 『True Explanation of Observing the Void and Inner Heaven and Earth』, the Daoist Hong Yun's eyes revealed excitement, feeling that the method before him was strikingly familiar.

"I have another related method."

Lü Yang calmly said, "That one is even more important; it's a secret technique used to connect with 【Overturning Lamp Flame】. I believe you'd be more interested in it?"

Upon hearing this, the Daoist Hong Yun immediately closed his eyes.

Lü Yang smiled, knowing that unlike his deal with Chong Guang, this time, he held complete control over the negotiations with the Daoist Hong Yun.

"Fellow Daoist, you must accompany me overseas."

With an assertive tone, Lü Yang stated directly, "In addition to the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】, you must also assist me in subduing that innate Dao abomination."

After all, he couldn't handle that Dao abomination alone.

"...Very well." Understanding that he had lost the initiative, the Daoist Hong Yun didn't haggle and straightforwardly agreed to Lü Yang's demands.

The transaction concluded satisfactorily, with both parties pleased.

After exchanging flying message spirit books for future contact, the Daoist Hong Yun watched Lü Yang depart, while internally musing:

'Who exactly is this person from the Primordial Saint Sect?'

'Could he be bait set by Chong Guang to lure me? Even if not, given the Primordial Saint Sect's ways, selling information to both sides is standard practice, and burning bridges afterward is commonplace.'

'Is he going to contact Chong Guang next?'

"Hey, hey, hey?"

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

Chong Guang looked at the flying message spirit book in his hand with a peculiar expression, watching as Lü Yang's handwriting rapidly appeared:

【Acting Sect Master, I have a golden opportunity to trap Hong Yun.】

【Interested?】

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,368 words]

Chapter 304: The Person Who Shouldn't Exist

Time flew like an arrow; the years passed like a shuttle.

In a remote courtyard within a mortal city in Jiangnan—

The area had already been sealed off by formations, isolating it from the outside world. Beneath the large locust tree in the courtyard, a youth in red robes sat cross-legged.

This youth looked exactly like Lü Yang, only much younger. His brows were raised, and the corners of his lips curled slightly, exuding a sharper, more spirited aura than Lü Yang's original body. The only flaw was his vacant expression—his pupils were dull and lacked light, clearly just an empty shell devoid of spirit.

“Not bad, not bad.”

In another corner of the courtyard, Lü Yang, using the 【Puppet Strings】 technique to manipulate the senses of a scattered cultivator in the Qi Refining realm, observed his creation with great interest.

At this moment, he had activated the hypothetical principle.

Though he didn't know if a True Lord was watching him, he acted as if one was. Thus, throughout the entire process of crafting the 【Immortal Embryo Avatar】 , he never showed his true body.

Even that wasn't secure enough.

'The Immortal Embryo Avatar also has flaws. If I, as the main consciousness, control the avatar and it's captured by 【Ang Xiao】 , even my original body could be implicated!'

The lessons from his previous life were etched deep into his memory.

So this time, Lü Yang decided to try a different method.

With this in mind, he immediately had the Qi Refining cultivator take out a jade box. Inside the box was a wisp of glowing divine sense, vivid and full of spirit.

This was a fragment of divine sense that Lü Yang had severed from himself using the 【Tribulation Wave】. It had been completely severed from his original body's karma, and its memories had been meticulously processed. If left to incubate a while longer, it would develop self-awareness and become a truly autonomous "second avatar."

In his previous life, Lü Yang would never have done this.

After all, a "second avatar" with self-awareness was an uncontrollable risk to the original body—keeping it would only invite trouble.

But this life was different.

'In this life, I have the 【Puppet Strings】! I can completely erase any troubles the second avatar might pose, allowing me to control it while isolating it from external influence!'

This way, even if the avatar encountered Ang Xiao and was ensnared by the Knowledge Obscuring Illusion, it would only affect the split-off divine sense. Lü Yang's original body could still control the avatar through the 【Puppet Strings】, effectively rendering him immune to the illusion's influence!

'Suo Huan really hated 【Ang Xiao】 to the bone.'

Lü Yang couldn't help but shake his head. The golden talent he had obtained from Suo Huan's life was practically tailor-made to counter the Knowledge Obscuring Illusion!

However, the 【Puppet Strings】 still had its limitations.

'First, it's still limited by my cultivation. My Immortal Spirit body is only in the early Foundation Establishment Realm, so I can at most control something at that level.'

'Second, it's ultimately just a talent conjured by the gold attribute of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】.'

'If the target also possesses the gold attribute—such as a True Lord or someone like Chong Guang at peak Foundation Establishment—it would be difficult to control them with this talent.'

Still, from Lü Yang's perspective, the true value of the 【Puppet Strings】 wasn't in mind control but in severing karmic ties. This allowed him to participate in the True Lord-level chess game as a piece, with one foot already off the board.

Soon, the divine sense fused into the Immortal Embryo Avatar.

The previously dull red-robed youth suddenly stood up. His once-scattered pupils now gathered focus and light, showing vitality. From the shadows, Lü Yang revealed a satisfied smile.

“Complete success!”

With that thought, two divine halos radiated from Lü Yang's body, blooming behind his head— 【Warlord's Domain】 and 【Lord of Stubborn Gold】 !

“I'll send this avatar on a trip overseas!”

Overseas, in the Biyang Cultivation Realm—

Lü Yang flew rapidly with light trailing behind him. From his sleeve, he drew two flying communication talismans—one to contact Chong Guang, and one for Hong Yun.

To Hong Yun: 【I've arrived. Where are you, fellow cultivator?】

To Chong Guang: 【Prepare to act!】

Moments later, under Lü Yang's expectant gaze, a figure split the void and silently descended, exuding a vast and imposing presence.

The newcomer's face was sharply defined like it had been carved with a blade. His eyes, though dim, glowed like lanterns in a temple hall. The moment his gaze fell on Lü Yang, it was as if Lü Yang's body had been set ablaze. Instantly, golden light burst forth, and he protected himself with 【Lord of Stubborn Gold】 .

Peak Foundation Establishment!?

Lü Yang stepped back, finally seeing the man's features clearly. His brow furrowed—he recognized this person. It was none other than the Primordial Saint Sect's True Person Hong Ju!

At once, old and new grudges surged in his heart.

Two lifetimes ago, this very man had killed him with the 【Fate Exchange Talisman Scroll】 ! Though in his last life he had helped Lü Yang, accounts must be settled properly.

Favors could be forgotten—but grudges? Never!

With that, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes. “It seems Senior Hong Yun doesn’t trust me. Worried I’ve set a trap, so you didn’t dare to come personally?”

True Person Hong Ju shot Lü Yang a silent look.

Wasn’t that obvious?

They were all True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect. If one could get something without paying for it, who wouldn’t want to? Lord Hong Yun was wary for a reason—against beasts like you!

“No need to worry. Lord Hong Yun and I are united in spirit. Whatever I see, hear, or perceive—he can also sense it simultaneously.”

True Person Hong Ju’s expression was calm. He was, after all, a construct molded from gold essence while Lord Hong Yun was still a True Lord. As long as Hong Yun didn’t die and his golden essence remained, he could continue existing. Essentially, he was quite similar to a Dao Calamity, with a link to Hong Yun akin to the connection between Lü Yang’s original body and his avatar.

‘So cautious... but understandable.’

The [latest chapter first posted at Six9Books Bar!](#)

Lü Yang pondered inwardly, growing more convinced that Hong Yun’s abrupt death in the previous life had likely been the secret work of **【Ang Xiao】** !

The next moment, the talisman from Chong Guang replied—

【Hong Yun hasn’t arrived. Plan canceled.】

‘What a pity.’

Lü Yang sighed inwardly but maintained a cheerful expression as he turned to Hong Ju. “It’s fine, it’s fine. I’ve always believed sincerity can break even the hardest stone.”

“Given time, I believe Senior Hong Yun will change his opinion of me.”

In his eyes, Hong Yun was actually quite capable.

Though his performance before was disappointing, that was only because his opponent was too formidable. With **【Ang Xiao】**’s grand scheme, he was trapped in a deadlock.

But there was always a sliver of hope.

Especially with 【Overturned Lamp Flame】 in play.

If Hong Yun could turn his situation around and draw the attention of 【Overturned Lamp Flame】 , his chances of attaining the Golden Core were far greater than Chong Guang's!

Because, unlike Chong Guang, whose talents and divine powers were one-time confirmations, when Hong Yun became a True Lord, 【Ang Xiao】 hadn't yet altered the Chen Earth attribute. Thus, Hong Yun lacked the "Chen Earth" flaw. If he caught the attention of 【Overturned Lamp Flame】 , he would have a high chance of ascending to a blessed land and becoming a True Lord!

But precisely because of this—

【Ang Xiao】 had been closely watching Hong Yun, preventing him from seizing even the smallest opportunity to regain his position for five thousand years.

Soon, the two arrived at the headquarters of the Immortal Alliance in the Biyang Cultivation Realm.

But in the next second, Lü Yang's steps abruptly halted.

Because within the headquarters, he saw someone who absolutely should not have been there, stunning him into stillness.

It was a voluptuous woman with a cold and pure face, noble demeanor, and restrained elegance—like a noble lady who never stepped out of her chambers. Yet her long dress was slit almost up to her waist, revealing snowy skin as she walked, faintly visible like a white lotus blooming in the mud.

'Impossible.'

Though he had often seen her within the All-Spirits Banner, this was the first time in years Lü Yang saw the real, living person again, and his pupils instantly contracted:

'...Yu Suzhen!?'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,341 words]

Chapter 305: Ang Xiao's Move!

Yu Suzhen, like Lü Yang in the past, had once been an outer sect disciple of the Primordial Saint Sect. She had shared a deep friendship with Lü Yang, and the guardian spirit Su Nu had even been refined from her.

However one looked at it, she absolutely should not have appeared here at this time!

And her cultivation level...

Lü Yang's eyes widened. At the headquarters of the Immortal Alliance, Yu Suzhen's entire being exuded a majestic and overwhelming aura—she was now actually a mighty cultivator at the Integration stage of the Biyang Cultivation Realm!

What level was this?

The Biyang Cultivation Realm was founded by an Innate True Person. They did not cultivate rankings, only refined true qi. Although an Integration-stage cultivator was theoretically still at the peak of the Qi Refining stage, their true qi was powerful enough to rival second-grade true qi. With the help of the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 , they could even feign Foundation Establishment!

If Yu Suzhen had reached such a realm, Lü Yang could understand.

After all, in one of his lifetimes, Lü Yang had once crafted a “Daughter of Destiny” experience for her, during which her performance had even astonished him.

She had been like a superhuman.

Yet no matter how superhuman she had been, Yu Suzhen absolutely should not be here right now, and certainly could not possess a cultivation at the peak of the Qi Refining stage!

Because only three years had passed.

It had only been three years since he restarted. How could someone rise from an ordinary outer sect disciple to a peak Qi Refining Integration cultivator in such a short time?

It made no sense!

Immediately after, Lü Yang saw Yu Suzhen silently entering a vast hall within the Immortal Alliance headquarters—the hall where the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 was kept.

"This should be the place."

She looked tense but also subtly excited. Then she raised her delicate hand and took out a flag from her scented pouch—one Lü Yang could not be more familiar with.

【Myriad Spirits Banner】 !

‘She got the inheritance of the Innate True Person from Liu Xin? Right, in that lifetime, she had forced Liu Xin to death with her own power.’

Lü Yang suddenly understood why Yu Suzhen had come to the Biyang Cultivation Realm. Yet even so, he still could not explain the change in her cultivation—reaching peak Qi Refining in just three years was simply outrageous. Even he, starting over, couldn’t cultivate that quickly.

“Fellow Daoist? What’s wrong?”

Seeing Lü Yang suddenly lower his head and fall silent, Hong Ju, who was accompanying him, revealed a puzzled look and glanced at Yu Suzhen inside the hall.

Out of habit, he pinched his fingers to divine.

But even Hong Ju’s expression turned odd—he couldn’t divine anything. Yu Suzhen had a treasure on her that concealed the workings of fate.

‘What secret does this woman hold?’

‘Wait—that banner... Innate True Person?’

Out of caution, Hong Ju did not act. Instead, he and Lü Yang simply stood silently in the hall, watching Yu Suzhen chant incantations while holding the Myriad Spirits Banner.

After all, one of them was at the mid-Foundation Establishment stage, the other at the peak. Even if Yu Suzhen had reached the peak of Qi Refining and could feign Foundation Establishment, the gap between them was still immense. Just by standing there and concealing their auras, Yu Suzhen couldn’t see them at all.

“Innate Primordial Qi, seal and command all spirits!”

Yu Suzhen poured all her magic power into the banner. With a forceful shake, the flag unfurled, manifesting a boundless illusory space.

This space resonated with the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Decree】 .

Almost simultaneously, the Decree burst into dazzling light, and within it appeared a vague figure.

‘Innate Dao Sin!?’

Seeing this, Lü Yang recalled intelligence he had obtained in a past life about killing the Innate Dao Sin and finally understood what Yu Suzhen was trying to do.

‘This is the Innate True Person’s contingency plan—using the Myriad Spirits Banner to summon and control the Innate Dao Sin. With the banner’s absolute control, she would extract the metal element from the Dao Sin’s body to cultivate a supreme first-grade technique he had deduced. The entire setup was seamless and flawless.’

Realization struck Lü Yang, and his pupils constricted!

According to his conjecture, Yu Suzhen’s rapid cultivation to peak Qi Refining and her journey across vast barriers to the Biyang Cultivation Realm must have had a powerful backer.

Until now, he had not known who it was.

But now he had the answer: if it was someone he couldn’t guess, it must have been 【Ang Xiao】 !

‘The key is, I remember the Innate True Person had sought metal through the Dao Sin and used 【Long Flowing Water】 as his spiritual fruit, ultimately dying due to issues related to 【Earth of the Stars】 !’

In the previous life, Chong Guang failed in seeking metal. The Dao Sin was refined by 【Ang Xiao】 into a clone, granting him an avatar that could roam the world unhindered and be invincible below the True Sovereign level. This drastically increased his control over the world. However, in this lifetime, Chong Guang hadn’t even started seeking metal.

The Dao Sin of Chong Guang naturally could not be found.

‘In the past, Ang Xiao might not have cared—his grand plan was already set, and he didn’t need deep control over the present world.’

‘But this life is different!’

‘This life, he’s encountered me—a rival he mistook for a “fellow Daoist,” someone like him hidden in the shadows, with an unknown true identity!’

Under such circumstances, how could 【Ang Xiao】 possibly sit still?

He clearly needed an avatar to act on his behalf in the world, and the Innate Dao Sin was undoubtedly the perfect material!

Yet the Innate Dao Sin had been sealed by the Innate True Person using the power of the spiritual fruit 【Long Flowing Water】 . It could not be freed without triggering a cosmic backlash and karmic entanglement—something only 【Ang Xiao】 could manage, but it would cause a major disturbance.

【Ang Xiao】 did not want to expose himself.

‘So he spent three years manipulating karma and accelerating Yu Suzhen’s growth, all for this moment—to harvest the Innate True Person’s Dao Sin!’

Yu Suzhen was Ang Xiao’s move!

The moment everything clicked, Lü Yang acted.

“Seal Mountain True Law!”

In the blink of an eye, Lü Yang completed a hand seal, incantation, and mystic pointing in three seamless steps, striking Yu Suzhen’s forehead just as she turned in shock.

In the next second, Yu Suzhen’s entire cultivation was suppressed by Lü Yang, and even the Myriad Spirits Banner was forcefully interrupted.

“Ah?”

At that moment, both Yu Suzhen, who was suppressed, and Lü Yang, who had acted without hesitation, stood frozen. Clearly, neither had expected that he would succeed.

【Ang Xiao】 couldn’t see this place?

Honestly, by this point, Lü Yang had assumed 【Ang Xiao】 was closely monitoring Yu Suzhen. He had only acted to test the waters, to see how the other would respond.

But he had actually succeeded.

Was 【Ang Xiao】 not here—or just afraid to appear?

In a flash, Lü Yang had a new guess: ‘Could it be... that the True Sovereign Qingcheng Feixue has been secretly watching this place all along?’

That was the only explanation.

Previously, Lü Yang had connected with Chong Guang, planning to ambush Hong Yun in the Biyang Cultivation Realm. Given Chong Guang’s caution, he would have definitely requested a True Sovereign to oversee things.

Lü Yang had thought Qingcheng Feixue lost interest after Hong Yun didn't appear and only Hong Ju came. But now it seemed she had never stopped watching, had always followed him—and that's why 【Ang Xiao】 hadn't dared to act!

'Excellent! This is my chance!'

Overjoyed, Lü Yang looked at the suppressed Yu Suzhen. He needed to know just how many tricks 【Ang Xiao】 had planted in this senior sister.

'Unfortunately, the 【Puppet String】 only works if the main body is present.'

And even with feigned Foundation Establishment, she still had traits of a "True Person." As one himself, Lü Yang couldn't recklessly perform a soul search on her.

'Seems I'll have to suffer again for the greater good.'

Those who achieve great things do not fuss over small matters.

With his thoughts racing, Lü Yang made a decision:

Kill Yu Suzhen!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,331 words]

Chapter 306: A Move Ahead in the Game

Lü Yang had always harbored the utmost hostility towards 【Ang Xiao】 .

Whatever 【Ang Xiao】 intended to do, he would sabotage; whatever 【Ang Xiao】 wished to avoid, he would ensure came to pass. His actions were a direct affront.

Thus, he found himself deeply intrigued by Yu Suzhen's experiences.

Achieving Qi Refining Great Perfection in just three years was undoubtedly due to significant opportunities facilitated by 【Ang Xiao】 . But how much of that was tainted by 【Ang Xiao】 's underhanded tactics?

With the esteemed Qing Chen Fairy present, it was the perfect chance to investigate!

Unable to perform a soul search, and with 【Puppet on Strings】 being unusable, Lü Yang didn't bother with questioning. Instead, he opted to let Yu Suzhen's body reveal the truth.

With this decision, Lü Yang immediately activated his superhuman state, focusing intently as he employed a secret technique. Familiar with the process, he effortlessly entered Yu Suzhen's sea of consciousness, causing her to emit a painful scream, as if a metal rod had pierced through her. Her past memories surged forth like a torrent.

'These past three years of experiences!'

Soon, Lü Yang had complete control over Yu Suzhen's memories. Layer upon layer of dim scenes surfaced, culminating in a vivid image before him.

Initially, Yu Suzhen's journey aligned with his expectations.

After enduring numerous hardships, she finally achieved Qi Refining and joined Mending Heaven Peak. Targeted by Liu Xin, she miraculously counterattacked, thereby obtaining the inheritance of the Innate True Person.

However, discrepancies arose at this point.

Within Liu Xin's Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, Yu Suzhen encountered an entity she had never seen before. Her current cultivation was a direct result of this being's guidance!

'Where is this place?'

In the memory, Lü Yang widened his eyes, only to see a turbid river, its churning waves revealing glistening white bones.

The river flowed vast and boundless.

At its center stood a massive boulder, as large as a mountain, firmly anchored in the middle, segmenting the river into distinct regions.

'Something's amiss.'

Lü Yang furrowed his brows. The scene was from Yu Suzhen's perspective within the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner. Yet, his understanding of the banner surpassed hers, and he had never discovered such a place within it! This was undoubtedly 【Ang Xiao】's contingency—had he tampered with the banner?([crptransfer.moe.gov.tw][1])

Suddenly, Lü Yang recalled.

'I've seen this place before.'

This memory wasn't originally his, yet he now vividly remembered every detail. In that recollection, he stood in this very location.

However, in that memory, another person was present.

That individual stood atop the massive boulder in the river's center, staring intently at him.

'Hiss!'

In an instant, Lü Yang gasped, instinctively looking towards the direction in the memory, only to see an additional figure had indeed appeared!

'No... he's an outsider!'

'A trap!?!'

At this moment, Lü Yang was performing a "soul search." The myriad scenes before him were essentially illusions. However, that figure was different—he was undeniably real!

He had stepped out from the memory!

An Indescribable Place.

Shrouded in layers of shadows and veiled in illusion, a handsome Daoist sat cross-legged in mid-air, his eyes flowing with starlight akin to a river.

In the next moment, he smiled:

"Fellow Daoist, you are truly extraordinary. I made a move in the Holy Sect, severing cause and effect, yet you managed to deduce it and came here with such a grand display to await me..."

【Ang Xiao】's tone carried a rare sense of exhilaration. To him, everything that had transpired was merely a game between him and the mysterious fellow Daoist behind the scenes. He had used Yu Suzhen as a chess piece, while the other had summoned Hong Ju, Qing Chen Fairy, and others to intercept his piece.

This was no ordinary feat!

'To so precisely deduce my true objective, it seems the matter of 【Chen Earth】 has been exposed. Not to mention, there's even a True Person observing.'([Novel Updates][2])

Lü Yang's suspicions were correct.

At this very moment, Qing Chen Fairy was crouching nearby overseas. However, her Dharma body had merged with the heavens and earth, making her invisible to those below the True Person realm.

'Fellow Daoist, you've never acted personally from start to finish.'

'Your use of others to do your bidding is masterful, hiding yourself in the shadows. But if you truly possess the capability and cultivation equal to mine, why remain concealed?'

【Ang Xiao】's smile widened: 'Your cultivation isn't high, is it?'

'Mid-stage Golden Core? Early-stage Golden Core? Perhaps you've borrowed the power of a fruit position. Surely not merely Foundation Establishment? Let me see how many tricks you have up your sleeve.'

At this juncture, 【Ang Xiao】 felt victory was within his grasp. Indeed, he intended to use Yu Suzhen's hand to lure out the Innate Dao Sin for refining into a clone. But he never placed all his eggs in one basket. Thus, Yu Suzhen was both his chess piece and the poisoned bait he had set!

In his view, the fellow Daoist behind the scenes had only miscalculated one thing.

'You probably didn't anticipate that I could already rudimentarily utilize the power of 【Netherworld】. This 【Nether Envoy】, though not my clone, is as effective as one.'

'If you ignore it, it will assist me in bringing the Innate Dao Sin back to the Netherworld, and my plan will still succeed.'

'But if you intend to stop it and kill it, you'll inevitably suffer backlash from the entire Netherworld!'

The Netherworld's backlash was far more severe than that of cause and effect.

Cause and effect was like a vast net, full of holes and countless oversights. But everyone had reincarnation; the influence of the 【Netherworld】 was truly pervasive!

'The Netherworld's backlash strikes directly at the true spirit. Even if you borrow another's body, you can't escape!'

At that time, he, residing in the 【Netherworld】, could follow this connection to directly locate the true identity of the fellow Daoist behind the scenes and uncover their origins.

'No matter which choice you make, I remain undefeated. In the end, I am still a move ahead in this game!'

Thinking of this, 【Ang Xiao】 couldn't help but laugh heartily. For someone like him, the feeling of outmaneuvering a "fellow Daoist" was a rare pleasure.

'So? Will you hand over the Innate Dao Sin, or shall I see your true face?'

【Ang Xiao】 looked expectantly towards the present world.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang had also come to his senses, realizing he had fallen into 【Ang Xiao】's scheme. However, he wasn't particularly flustered.

'My true body is far away; at worst, it's just the clone that suffers.'

Through 【Puppet on Strings】 , Lü Yang observed the figure that had suddenly appeared before him. The other had stepped out from the memory and directly entered the clone's sea of consciousness.

Upon closer inspection, the figure was half black and half white, grotesque in appearance, tall and thin, holding a mourning staff in one hand and dragging a soul-hooking chain in the other. He laughed heartily, revealing a mouthful of sharp teeth, squinting as he looked at Lü Yang, emitting a chilling light. Upon seeing Lü Yang, he immediately spoke:

"Hey! Where did this demon come from?"

At these words, Lü Yang burst into laughter: "Demon? I think you look more like a demon. Intruding into another's sea of consciousness without permission is hardly the act of a righteous path."

"Impudent!"

The figure sneered: "Do you take me for one of those mortals with fleshly eyes? You have a spirit but no soul, consciousness but no essence. If you're not a demon, then what are you?"

'Judging by this tone... it's not 【Ang Xiao】 himself?'

Lü Yang listened carefully, speculating in his heart: 'What exactly is this thing? The demon it refers to... could it be the Dao Sin?'

In this aspect, 【Ang Xiao】's methods were quite similar to Lü Yang's. However, while Lü Yang had created a 【Second Clone】 , 【Ang Xiao】 had fashioned a 【Nether Envoy】 . Both were unaware of their true origins, knowing only to complete the tasks assigned by their manipulator behind the scenes.

Thus, in the next moment, the creature shook its head: "Forget it, I can't be bothered to meddle."

"Anyway, you, a person without soul or essence, are destined for reincarnation. Whether you are or aren't, today I'll capture you along with that demon outside!"

-

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 307 : Where Non-Action Exists, Action Emerges; Where Action Exists, It Returns to Non-Action

[1,659 words]

Chapter 307: Where Non-Action Exists, Action Emerges; Where Action Exists, It Returns to Non-Action

As the words fell, the [Underworld Messenger] opened its massive mouth.

Within the blood-colored maw was a tongue resembling a river of blood, and its sharp fangs were like a heap of white bones. A piercing screech echoed as if countless vengeful spirits cried out in unison.

“Boom!”

In an instant, a terrifying divine radiance shook Lü Yang's sea of consciousness violently. Strands of golden light immediately enveloped his divine sense.

[Stubborn Gold Duke]!

This innate divine ability was a standard life-saving technique. With its divine power, one could withstand axes and halberds without harm, even protecting the sea of consciousness!

However, the [Underworld Messenger]'s strength was clearly far above Lü Yang's, as it was created by [Ang Xiao], starting as a late-stage Foundation Establishment grand cultivator.

Soon after, the golden light formed by [Stubborn Gold Duke] shattered under the [Underworld Messenger]'s screech. The terrifying sound waves reverberated within Lü Yang's sea of consciousness, until his sea of consciousness, divine soul, and memories were all shattered into a tangled mess, only then did the screeching cease.

But in the next moment—

“Hmm?”

A golden light suddenly appeared. Before the [Underworld Messenger] could react, a sword light rose from the shattered sea of consciousness and slashed toward it!

“Not dead yet?”

The [Underworld Messenger] blocked the sword light with a look of astonishment, only to find its dharma body disintegrating inch by inch under the illumination of the sword light, like ice and snow melting!

[Master of Arms]!

Lü Yang naturally wouldn't entrust the [Tribulation Wave] to a clone, so at this moment, he used a portion of the mystical power symbolizing "Transformation" from the [Master of Arms].

Transformation signifies change.

When things reach their extreme, they change!

This divine ability could alter the nature of objects, turning gold into iron, iron into mud. Under its influence, the [Underworld Messenger] felt its originally light soul body suddenly become countless times heavier, and its once ethereal divine sense gradually took on a tangible metallic sensation!

“How is this possible?”

The [Underworld Messenger] widened its eyes, completely unable to comprehend: “...My [Malevolent Yin Screech] shattered your sea of consciousness, how can you still engage in battle?”

The answer was simple.

'The clone's sea of consciousness is shattered, but what does that have to do with my main body? As long as my soul isn't scattered and the [Puppet on Strings] remains, I can forcibly make him fight!'

Though that was the case, Lü Yang was already cursing inwardly.

'Where's Hong Ju? Where's Clear Snow True Lord? Why haven't they acted? Can't they see such a massive [Underworld Messenger] invading my sea of consciousness?'

Teammates, where are you? Save me!

Meanwhile, the [Underworld Messenger] seemed to see through Lü Yang's thoughts and sneered: "Don't hold onto false hopes; no one can help you now."

"Long before awakening, I spread the [Scorched Stone]. Now, in your sea of consciousness, even if a million years pass, only a moment has passed outside. Perhaps someone has already tried to save you, but before they can, you'll have been tormented by the loneliness here into giving up thinking."

After speaking, the [Underworld Messenger] expected Lü Yang to be terrified.

However, what met its gaze was Lü Yang's eyes filled with greedy fervor.

'Such a divine ability exists...'

Lü Yang was amazed. A million years within a single thought—clearly, the [Underworld Messenger]'s methods were all designed to abandon the physical body and target the soul.

Which fruit position does this correspond to?

'...The Underworld!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang became even more restless. In today's world, there had never been a cultivator practicing the [Underworld]; this was the first he had seen!

How was it cultivated?

'This monster's mana is very peculiar. Although I didn't notice it before, after the battle and the resonance of qi, it feels somewhat familiar.'

A bit like a celestial spirit!

'Damn it, could this be a celestial spirit born from the qi of the [Underworld]? Not only the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiends, but the [Underworld] can also give birth to celestial spirits!?'

Lü Yang almost immediately thought of his golden innate ability [Innate Celestial Spirit]. If the [Underworld] could indeed give birth to celestial spirits, then wouldn't he also have a chance to prove the fruit of emptiness? This concerns the Nascent Soul Dao Master... perhaps this is the opportunity for him to reach the pinnacle in the future!

However, Lü Yang quickly calmed down.

'Not necessarily. This monster is clearly a backup left by [Ang Xiao] in Yu Suzhen's body; it may not be naturally formed. The situation with the [Underworld] is still unclear.'

As for the [Underworld Messenger]'s threat, he completely disregarded it.

A moment equals a million years?

That's simple.

With a thought, Lü Yang directly severed the connection with the [Puppet on Strings]. After a moment passed, he reconnected with the clone.

In just that instant, the situation outside had drastically changed.

“Boom!”

Hong Ju had made his move.

In fact, the moment the [Underworld Messenger] appeared, Hong Ju had already acted, but time had been infinitely stretched by the [Underworld Messenger]'s divine ability.

However, after Lü Yang severed the connection with the clone, he immediately escaped the influence of the [Underworld Messenger]'s divine ability. The so-called million years reverted to a mere instant. Only after Hong Ju cast a spell to extract the [Underworld Messenger] from the clone's sea of consciousness did Lü Yang retake control.

Through this operation, all the damage was borne by the clone.

Lü Yang's main body remained unscathed!

At the same time, [Ang Xiao], who was secretly observing, also noticed the change in the battle but seemed disinterested: 'It seems the fellow Daoist doesn't intend to act?'

The [Underworld Messenger] wasn't dead.

This indicated that the mysterious fellow Daoist behind the scenes had chosen to give up, preferring to hand over the innate Dao sin to him rather than reveal their true identity.

If Lü Yang could hear [Ang Xiao]'s thoughts, he would surely be exasperated.

Did I not want to kill the [Underworld Messenger]?

I simply couldn't defeat it!

In the next second, a vast and boundless power suddenly descended. It was none other than Clear Snow True Lord, who had been watching the spectacle from overseas, finally making a move.

The [Underworld Messenger]'s uniqueness had clearly attracted her attention.

However, [Ang Xiao] seemed indifferent.

【Underworld Messenger】's strength was actually not very formidable. It was merely a form crafted using a portion of 【Netherworld】 Qi. Though it looked intimidating, it held no real value.

But that wasn't the key point.

'Now, who still remembers the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner?'

Knowledge-Perception Obstruction!

The appearance of the 【Underworld Messenger】 was deliberately used by him to draw others' attention, serving as bait to assist in casting the Knowledge-Perception Obstruction, thereby concealing the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner.

'Innate Dao Sin, I shall take it.'

Latest novel posted first on Six 9 Book Bar!

In this moment, everything fell silent.

An invisible shroud spread out, covering the spirit platform and clouding perception, so much so that no one remembered, or even if they saw it, instinctively ignored:

The Ten Thousand Spirits Banner was still channeling the Innate Dao Sin!

This process had previously been interrupted by Lü Yang, yet it had unknowingly resumed—and none of those present noticed such an obvious shift.

Except for Lü Yang.

The Knowledge-Perception Obstruction had fallen on his clone, making it so that even if the clone saw it, it would ignore it. However, Lü Yang, who witnessed the scene through the 【Puppet on Strings】 , was not affected!

Yet even though he saw it, he was powerless to stop it.

"Ten Thousand Spirits Banner!"

Lü Yang tried to shout a warning, but even his voice was shrouded and concealed. No one responded. He could only watch helplessly as events unfolded.

'In the previous lifetime... he probably did the same thing, under the gaze of many True Lords, and took away the Dao Sin of Chong Guang!'

'Unlike when facing Foundation Establishment cultivators, when confronting True Lords, he likely couldn't fabricate things from thin air to deceive perception—he relied more on diverting attention!'

'Diverting the attention of the True Lords!'

'In the previous life, it was with a great battle. In this life, it's with that monster—it's like fishing.'

'As long as True Lord Qingcheng Feixue takes interest in his bait, he can use the Knowledge-Perception Obstruction to cause her to ignore everything else.'

'So insidious!'

Lü Yang sighed helplessly in his heart. The Innate Dao Sin had originally been his goal. He had even hoped to calculate a new talent using the metal essence of the Innate True Person.

Now it seemed he had no choice but to give up.

However, just at that moment—

“Crack!”

A crisp explosive sound suddenly rang in everyone's ears, as if it shattered some invisible barrier, unexpectedly dispelling the effects of the Knowledge-Perception Obstruction!

“Hm? Who is it!?”

In an instant, the voice of True Lord Qingcheng Feixue resounded in all directions. Her immense divine sense immediately locked onto 【Ang Xiao】, who was just about to take the Innate Dao Sin.

At this moment, the channeling was complete.

Yet as the mastermind behind it all, 【Ang Xiao】 furrowed his brows.

Not only because the Knowledge-Perception Obstruction had suddenly broken and True Lord Qingcheng Feixue had discovered his presence, but also because of the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner in his hand.

‘So heavy...!?’

Something was off!

The Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, which had seemed utterly ordinary to him before, had undergone changes after it absorbed the Innate Dao Sin—changes even he had not foreseen!

The next second, a calm voice drifted through the air:

“When false becomes true, true also becomes false. When nothingness seems real, reality returns to void.”

“Mu Changsheng leaves 【Realm of Emptiness】 here, as a legacy for later generations.”

In that instant, even with 【Ang Xiao】’s strong mental discipline, a trace of shock appeared in his eyes—for this voice was one he was all too familiar with:

“.Innate True Person Mu Changsheng!?”

In a flash of realization, 【Ang Xiao】 suddenly understood the heaviness of the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner in his hand.

‘This is... the weight of the Dao Fruit!’

In his later years, the Innate True Person had bitterly sought the First-Grade True Qi, pursuing “Void Realization”, but ultimately died seeking 【Endless Flowing Water】. He had assumed the man faded into obscurity.

But now, looking at this—

‘Back then, he actually succeeded!?’

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 308 : The Fruit of Emptiness, the Heaven of Nonexistence!

[1,541 words]

Chapter 308: The Fruit of Emptiness, the Heaven of Nonexistence!

This was a truly wondrous sensation.

It began with the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner in 【Ang Xiao】's hand, then started to spread outward, like a gentle breeze brushing past everyone present.

Something had arrived.

At this moment, everyone felt the same sensation in their hearts. However, that was all—they could not see it, hear it, or touch it, as if it were an illusion.

In an instant, countless voices rang in Lü Yang's ears, and everything around him became blurred, as if an invisible veil had suddenly appeared, impossible to lift. He felt as though he were ascending to the heavens, moving through clouds and rain, unable to see the sun and moon above or the rivers and seas below.

'He pulled my consciousness in!?'

Lü Yang was slightly startled, but his actions were not slow. He once again severed the connection with his clone, switching from a first-person perspective to a third-person one.

However, he saw it.

The entire headquarters of the Immortal Alliance was now frozen like insects and birds trapped in amber. Everyone had their eyes closed in slumber, completely unaware of the outside world.

Only two people were exceptions.

One was the True Lord Qingcheng Feixue, who had acted at the last moment. Her three thousand strands of black hair cascaded like a waterfall, and her exquisite face bore a dignified expression, resembling a classical lady. The other was a figure shrouded in mist, their face obscured, gender indiscernible, with a concealed appearance that clearly indicated they were 【Ang Xiao】.

“What a Mu Changsheng!”

At this moment, 【Ang Xiao】 suddenly spoke, laughing heartily: “I underestimated you. The Fruit of Emptiness... it truly has some depth!”

“Interesting.”

On the other side, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue stared directly at 【Ang Xiao】 , smiling coldly: “Who are you? Hiding your head and showing your tail in front of me.”

“...Are you a True Lord of our Holy Sect?”

Faced with such a question, 【Ang Xiao】 naturally could not admit it. He merely smiled, then shifted his gaze towards Lü Yang.

The next second, he laughed aloud:

‘Did you foresee this, fellow Daoist? Knowing that Mu Changsheng had other arrangements, you refrained from taking action. It seems I have provided you with some amusement.’

His words showed no regret over his failed scheme; instead, he was full of smiles. In planning and scheming, there are gains and losses. He excelled in this path and had failed the most in it, so he could naturally take it in stride. Moreover, the current situation was not without its gains for him.

‘This person... must be a True Lord!’

Under the influence of the Fruit of Emptiness, everyone's consciousness had been drawn away, leaving their bodies defenseless. Anyone could come and slaughter them all.

Only a True Lord could multitask.

And now, he once again felt a mysterious gaze upon him, indicating that the other party could also maintain their consciousness unaffected by the Fruit of Emptiness.

If not a True Lord, then what?

‘It seems I was overly suspicious before...’

Lü Yang had remained hidden in the shadows from beginning to end, not daring to show himself, causing 【Ang Xiao】 to suspect that he was actually a bold Foundation Establishment cultivator at the peak.

Now, it seemed that was a misjudgment.

After all, Hong Ju, who was also at the peak of Foundation Establishment, was already deeply entranced and unable to extricate himself, while Lü Yang could still maintain partial clarity.

American Fisheries Society

“This time, fellow Daoist has the upper hand.”

“But the outcome is still uncertain!”

As his words fell, 【Ang Xiao】 sat cross-legged and closed his eyes, beginning to carefully comprehend the mysterious Fruit of Emptiness that had suddenly appeared.

Army Veterinary Medical Command

On the other side, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue also glanced at Lü Yang with interest:

‘I knew there was something off about this person.’

‘The method he used against that woman just now, the harvesting technique, should come from the "Mending Heaven True Scripture"... Could he be a former master of Mending Heaven Peak from our Holy Sect?’

‘Then who is the True Lord behind him?’

‘And this one...’

Thinking of this, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue looked again in 【Ang Xiao】's direction. The other party was too well concealed; she suspected it was someone she knew.

‘...Forget it.’

After some thought, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue refocused her attention on the mysterious Fruit of Emptiness before her, a trace of admiration appearing in her eyes: “Mu Changsheng, an Innate True Person... truly remarkable. The concept of 'Emptiness Certification' is so elusive. How did he achieve it? It's simply unbelievable!”

With this in mind, she quickly entered meditation.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang, seeing that both True Lords had no intention of acting and confirming that he could sever the connection at any time, reconnected with his clone.

The next second, the howling wind sounded in Lü Yang's ears. When he opened his eyes again, he found himself back in that realm above the clouds and rain.

Only now, a figure had appeared before him.

It was an old man in white robes, with crane-like hair and a youthful face, a gentle smile on his face. However, his body appeared somewhat ethereal, clearly not a physical being of flesh and blood.

“Poor Daoist Mu Changsheng, greetings, fellow Daoist.”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang immediately cupped his hands in return. Then he saw the old man in white robes speak solemnly: “This 'Heaven of Nonexistence' was left behind by this poor Daoist before death.”

“However, fellow Daoist is currently still outside the 'Heaven of Nonexistence' and has not truly entered it. This poor Daoist has come specifically to explain the pros and cons to you. Otherwise, if you rashly enter the 'Heaven of Nonexistence' without knowing how to respond, resulting in a loss of merit and fortune, that would not be my intention.”

The Innate True Person spoke very politely.

However, Lü Yang did not listen to a single word. He just stared straight at him: “Fellow Daoist, you are from five thousand years ago, yet you are still alive?”

Could it be that, like the Blood Demon True Person, he was feigning death to prolong his life?

Foundation Establishment True Persons could also live for a long time using such methods, but it was akin to death, with their consciousness dormant, offering no real sense of longevity to the individual.

The next second, the Innate True Person shook his head:

“No, this poor Daoist has long been dead.”

He appeared calm as he said: “The various True Lords oversee the heavens and the earth. In the past, they regarded me as a thorn in their side. If I were alive, how could I have escaped their notice?”

“Then, senior...” Lü Yang looked hesitant.

As he spoke, the brow of the Innate True Person suddenly relaxed, revealing a self-satisfied expression. “This is precisely the wonder of 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 !”

“When the false is taken as real, the real becomes false; where nothing is done, something arises, yet where something is, nothing remains.”

“The self you see, fellow Daoist, is but an illusory self, a manifestation evolved by the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 itself. The real me, my soul, has long since been reincarnated.”

Lü Yang's face revealed a look of astonishment. "...There's such a thing?"

"Ordinary means naturally could not achieve this, but the fruit I attained made it possible," the Innate True Person said with a smile, pointing upward above his head.

The fruit rank: 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 !

"Consciousness is a subtle thing. Although I am not truly a living being, from my own perspective, I do consider myself to be 【alive】 ."

As his voice fell, the Innate True Person ceased his explanation and shifted the topic: "Unfortunately, the Dao Sin formed after my death was released too early. I originally left it behind to borrow the intent of 【Endless Flow】 's 【Infinity】 , but now that the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 has not yet achieved completion, it has broken free."

"If that Dao Sin had been taken away by other means, it would not have mattered— 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 would still have remained concealed."

"But it was precisely the method I left behind that was used, guided by the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, and through the entanglement of karma, the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 ultimately revealed itself."

"Perhaps this too is fate."

At this point, the Innate True Person shook his head again. Clearly, in his original plan, the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 was not supposed to manifest until it had reached full completion.

—

Watching the contemplative expression of the Innate True Person, Lü Yang remained silent. Instead, he sat upright with a solemn demeanor, carefully observing the kindly-faced elder before him.

After some deliberation, he finally asked in a steady tone, "Then why did Senior summon me here?"

Faced with Lü Yang's inquiry, the Innate True Person did not answer directly. Instead, he pointed downward beneath himself. "Fellow Daoist, do you know what the scene within this 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 truly is?"

Lü Yang shook his head. "May Senior enlighten me."

“The answer is simple. 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 is something I brought forth from emptiness. The scenes within are naturally my own lifetime—none other than the great calamity from five thousand years ago!”

“And you are not the only one I’ve invited.”

“All cultivators in the world, so long as they have reached Foundation Establishment, may enter the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 , to retrace the tribulation I once faced. Whoever can overcome it and emerge will be the one to take control of the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 ...”

“To ascend to the rank of True Lord!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,556 words]

Chapter 309: The Secret of the Millennium Calamity!

As the words fell, the voice of the Innate True Person reverberated through the clouds like muffled thunder.

Immediately after, Lü Yang exhaled deeply, for at the very moment the Innate True Person's words concluded, numerous memories surfaced in his mind.

These memories did not belong to him.

Rather, they "appeared out of thin air" in his mind; he could even sense the eerie way they emerged, as if being drawn out bit by bit.

These memories pertained to the rules of 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 .

"In the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 , there are a total of five scenarios, each corresponding to a calamity the Innate True Person encountered five thousand years ago."

"It was precisely because of these five calamities that the Innate True Person ultimately halted at the Foundation Establishment stage."

"The so-called breaking through the calamities refers to me entering the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 and resolving the five calamities in the guise of the 'Innate True Person'."

"Breaking through one calamity grants one divine ability."

"Breaking through all five calamities allows one to master the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 !"

Lü Yang suddenly realized that all the talk about breaking through calamities and mastering fruit positions was illusory; the key was that this was a cultivation method corresponding to the fruit position of the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 !

'Fruit positions are held high in the heavens, supported by numerous cultivators from below!'

Lü Yang immediately recalled the characteristics of fruit positions: 'Without cultivators supporting them, fruit positions, though retaining their might, would become hidden from the world and difficult to attain.'

'Just like the current state of the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 , with no one cultivating it, it has yet to truly reach perfection!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang couldn't help but look at the Innate True Person, his heart filled with indescribable shock. In the past, the Clear Snow True Lord had personally stated that empty certification was illusory and elusive.

But judging by this, the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 possessed nearly all the characteristics of a fruit position!

How did he achieve this?

Was it solely by relying on the 【Long Flowing Water】 ? Or did he draw upon some of the great power introduced by karmic sins? If it were that simple to achieve empty certification, wouldn't others have succeeded already?

Moreover, the Innate True Person's empty certification was different. In his previous life, Lü Yang had heard the Clear Snow True Lord explain that even the empty certification of a first-grade true achievement was essentially about plundering from the outside, not creating from nothing. But the 【Heaven of Nonexistence】 achieved by the Innate True Person was truly created from nothing!

"Fellow Daoist, your reputation is well-deserved."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang cupped his hands in admiration, then tentatively said, "No wonder you are the embodiment of the millennium calamity."

".Oh?"

Upon hearing this, the previously indifferent Innate True Person immediately raised his eyebrows and said, "Embodiment of the calamity... Is that what you believe?"

"This is what the True Lord in my sect said."

"Oh, then it's not surprising."

At this point, the Innate True Person sneered coldly, "A bunch of insects, selfish and of no benefit to heaven and earth. It's normal for them to slander me like this."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang's eyebrows twitched slightly.

Slander? Does that mean the embodiment of the calamity is false?

The next second, the Innate True Person looked at him and continued, "Do you know what the millennium calamity is?"

"I have some guesses," Lü Yang cupped his hands and said, "I suspect the millennium calamity is the calamity of war between this realm and many other realms beyond the heavens."

".Ha!"

The Innate True Person nodded upon hearing this, "To guess this, it seems the force behind you indeed has a True Lord overseeing it."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang immediately cursed inwardly.

No wonder he suddenly asked me; he was testing to see if there was truly a True Lord behind me?

"The talk of war is not far off."

The Innate True Person continued:

"The so-called millennium calamity is indeed the calamity of war between realms, a joint effort by the True Lords of this realm to attack and break through other realms, a great battle to devour the fruit positions of other realms."

"This was originally a good thing."

"After all, by devouring the fruit positions of other realms, the fruit positions of our heaven and earth would continually rise, and the strength of the True Lords would also increase accordingly."

"However... the True Lords are all selfish!"

At this point, the Innate True Person's tone revealed some resentment: "They discovered that the gains from warring with other realms didn't necessarily need to be integrated into heaven and earth."

"They didn't integrate the resources obtained from warring with other realms into heaven and earth but chose to integrate them into their own cave heavens, allowing their cave heavens to never fall, thereby completely monopolizing the fruit positions. The result was that the gains from each war with other realms were all privately swallowed by these True Lords!"

"Clearly, integrating into heaven and earth would strengthen the fruit positions, and they would also become stronger."

"Simply a bunch of insects!" As he spoke, the Innate True Person waved his sleeve, "How can heaven and earth thrive with such a group of insects?"

"..." Lü Yang remained silent.

Although the Innate True Person spoke with righteous indignation and sounded reasonable at first glance, upon careful thought, Lü Yang actually agreed more with the actions of the True Lords.

The reason was simple.

A Golden Core True Lord has only a thousand years of lifespan. Although they have no mystery of the womb and can reincarnate continuously, belonging to a different kind of longevity, they are not eternal masters of the fruit position.

Therefore, for a True Lord, what significance does integrating the gains into the fruit position have? What if they become stronger? It doesn't increase their lifespan. Even if they nurture the fruit position to be plump and healthy, if they die of old age later and fall from the fruit position, and someone else takes it, wouldn't that be a huge loss?

A lifetime of cultivation, all for someone else's benefit.

Who could accept that?

In comparison, integrating the gains from warring with other realms into their own cave heavens may be a loss for the fruit positions of heaven and earth, but for the True Lords, it's a huge gain!

'No wonder... I misunderstood before!'

'I previously thought that second-grade true achievements involved integrating the fruit positions of other realms into their own fruit positions. Now it seems they should be integrated into their own cave heavens!'

'That's why the characteristic of the mid-Golden Core stage is the cave heaven not falling!'

Lü Yang suddenly understood and also had some guesses about the cultivation of the True Lords: for the True Lords, the fruit position might be important for maintaining their status.

But it's not the foundation!

The foundation of the True Lords has always been their own cave heavens!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang looked at the Innate True Person again, "Forgive my ignorance, this matter is a secret among the True Lords. I wonder what it has to do with you, Senior?"

"Because I am different from them."

The Innate True Person spoke frankly, "The True Lords privately swallowed the gains from warring with other realms, so heaven and earth naturally needed someone else to help, and I was that person."

"The talk of the embodiment of the calamity is somewhat misleading, but I do have some support from heaven and earth, with merit upon me. That's why the True Lords took action!"

"After all, the gains from the other realms have already been monopolized by them. How could they allow another mouth to share the spoils?"

"So they schemed and plotted, causing me to halt at the Foundation Establishment stage. This way, even if I participated in the wars with other realms, I could only take away resources suitable for Foundation Establishment."

"As for the fruit positions of the other realms, they would still be exclusively enjoyed by them."

Lü Yang immediately understood.

Damn, how insidious!

At this point, the Innate True Person suddenly clapped his hands, "One of the True Lords is the most disgusting! It's that damned Primordial Saint Sect..."

As he spoke, he glanced at Lü Yang, "Fellow Daoist, you're not from the Primordial Saint Sect, are you?"

"Of course not."

Lü Yang responded without hesitation, decisively distancing himself, and said with a calm expression, "I am a disciple of the Sword Pavilion! The current leader of the righteous path, how could I associate with demons?"

"I see..."

The Innate True Person nodded upon hearing this, then looked in other directions. He didn't just ask Lü Yang this question; he asked everyone who entered.

The responses varied.

Among them, 【Ang Xiao】 , like Lü Yang, chose to distance himself: "Although I was once a member of the Demon Sect, I deeply felt the treachery of the Demon Sect and had long since defected."

However, the Clear Snow True Lord crossed her arms and laughed loudly:

"That's right! I am indeed a True Lord of the Saint Sect!"

"What do you intend to do?"

Retracting his gaze, the Innate True Person's expression remained calm: "...Whether you are or not, this is our first meeting, and perhaps our last."

'After all, the next time we meet, it will be when you break through the five calamities.'

'At that time, we can discuss the Dao together.'

As his words fell, his figure quietly disappeared. Then, the clouds parted, and Lü Yang suddenly felt his previously ethereal body sink abruptly.

"Boom!"

The next second, Lü Yang lost consciousness.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,197 words]

Chapter 310: Who the Hell Can Stop Me?

"Master? Master, please wake up."

A voice echoed near his ears. Lü Yang opened his eyes, only to be greeted by the sight of a woman in a red dress, her beauty unparalleled, with a vermilion mark between her brows.

Looking around, he saw beaded curtains and embroidered drapes, intricately carved beams and painted eaves. Light shimmered through vermilion doors onto golden floors; snow reflected off jade windows, creating a palace of pure white. A fragrant aroma filled the air, intoxicating Lü Yang's senses.

However, in the next moment, unfamiliar memories surfaced in his mind:

"A Precelestial True Person at the peak of Qi Refining secluded himself to break through to Foundation Establishment, only to be betrayed by the Holy Sect. They discovered his secluded location and destroyed his Qi foundation."

"As a result, he had to establish his foundation with fourth-grade Qi, severing his path to ascension."

"The Precelestial True Person sought emptiness and verification, partly because it benefited heaven and earth, but perhaps also because he had lost hope in the righteous path."

"This was the first tribulation!"

Lü Yang snapped back to reality and looked around. His current situation mirrored that of the Precelestial True Person, including the information he possessed.

'What a formidable \[Heaven of Nonexistence].'

Lü Yang was shaken. If he weren't controlling a puppet clone via \[Puppet Strings], he might not have discerned the illusions of \[Heaven of Nonexistence].

Everything he saw, heard, and smelled—even his own body—felt incredibly real. His cultivation was no longer at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment but at the peak of Qi Refining. Clearly, \[Heaven of Nonexistence] required him to resolve the situation as the Precelestial True Person.

Any methods beyond this identity were prohibited.

'Given time, \[Heaven of Nonexistence] will undoubtedly expand, becoming a coveted realm for all cultivators, beyond even the reach of True Lords!'

Lü Yang instantly realized the terror of \[Heaven of Nonexistence].

This was the first tribulation, so he could only replace the Precelestial True Person at the peak of Qi Refining. But as time passed, the Precelestial True Person would progress!

'Once the Precelestial True Person's cultivation surpasses that of the tribulation breaker, the latter can experience higher realms of cultivation in advance!'

More importantly, seeking gold!

'The Precelestial True Person eventually sought gold. If this is also a tribulation, it offers Foundation Establishment True Persons a simulated opportunity to seek gold!'

This alone was enough to attract all Foundation Establishment True Persons.

Moreover, according to the Precelestial True Person, each tribulation overcome in \[Heaven of Nonexistence] granted a corresponding divine ability—a tremendous temptation.

Furthermore, \[Heaven of Nonexistence] was devoid of death.

'\[Heaven of Nonexistence] is an illusory realm; physical bodies cannot enter, nor can souls or divine thoughts. Only consciousness can enter.'

Therefore, even if a cultivator failed the tribulation and died within \[Heaven of Nonexistence], they would merely be dazed for a few days and lose some merit and fortune, without life-threatening consequences. Comparing the gains to the risks, \[Heaven of Nonexistence] was overwhelmingly beneficial—how could one not be tempted?

Of course, it wasn't without drawbacks.

The flow of time within \[Heaven of Nonexistence] matched that of the outside world. Once a cultivator entered, their physical body would be completely unguarded.

'However, as long as I only use the puppet clone controlled by \[Puppet Strings] to enter, I can sever the connection when necessary to avoid this issue.'

Lü Yang thought to himself, then got up from the bed, glancing at the woman beside him. The Precelestial True Person's memories held no recollection of her.

Not even this place.

In his memories, the Precelestial True Person was secluded, preparing for Foundation Establishment, when he suffered a deviation. Upon opening his eyes, he found himself here.

Though the Precelestial True Person didn't recognize this place, Lü Yang did.

"The Precelestial True Person cultivated Qi, originally aiming to establish the \[Void Profound Qi Dao Foundation], but was sabotaged by the Holy Sect, resulting in only establishing the \[Qi Dao Foundation]."

Why did this happen?

Looking at the entire Holy Sect, what method could degrade third-grade Qi to a lower grade, even damaging the Dao foundation?

'The \[Heaven-Mending True Scripture]!'

Lü Yang was well-versed in this third-grade divine art of the Holy Sect and had ample practical experience. Naturally, he recognized it instantly.

"The \[Heaven and Earth Yin-Yang Dragon-Tiger Contesting Formation], derived from the \[Heaven-Mending True Scripture], is arranged by 108 \[Heavenly Maidens], each playing instruments like the pipa and guqin, engaging in playful acts, ultimately causing one to lose their senses and emotions, leading to a drastic drop in Qi grade."

This was a superior formation.

Once activated, aside from the 108 \[Heavenly Maidens], there were distinctions between the main array and those entering it. In essence, the main array's person plundered the entrant.

The result was a significant drop in the entrant's Qi grade.

The main array's person reaped all benefits, with a substantial increase in Qi grade.

Fortunately, Lü Yang was quite familiar with this.

Looking around, he saw a city of women, with beauties of various appearances and demeanors moving about.

However, Lü Yang knew this was merely an illusion.

Under the \[Heaven and Earth Yin-Yang Dragon-Tiger Contesting Formation], only the women were real; all other scenes were illusions meant to captivate.

If the formation ran its course, Lü Yang would encounter countless soulmates in this city, each leading to intricate stories, making one pledge life and death, eventually sinking into depravity and forgetting the past, becoming scum.

There were roughly three ways to break this formation.

Either pass through the myriad flowers without a single leaf sticking—maintaining one's essence, spirit, and energy, avoiding the illusion's influence, and calmly walking out.

Or, fight one's way out.

With a heart of stone, initiate a massacre, causing a bloody storm, until the formation's foundation collapsed.

However, Lü Yang chose neither, as he currently inherited the identity of the 'Precelestial True Person,' limiting his available methods.

For instance, the \[Heaven-Mending True Scripture].

To deal with such a formation, the best method was the \[Heaven-Mending True Scripture]. If Lü Yang could use it, the formation would collapse instantly.

However, under the rules of \[Heaven of Nonexistence], he couldn't use it.

Similarly, whether maintaining his mind under the \[Heaven and Earth Yin-Yang Dragon-Tiger Contesting Formation] or fighting his way out was challenging for him at the moment.

Therefore, he could only choose the third method.

'At this point, I have no choice but to charge ahead!'

With this thought, Lü Yang activated his superhuman state and boldly rushed into the formation, startling the \[Heavenly Maidens] who arranged it.

However, they quickly regained their composure.

Courting death!

After all, there were 108 of them, empowered by the formation, attacking in turns. Who below Foundation Establishment could withstand them?

Yet soon, they realized something was amiss.

Lü Yang grew more courageous with each battle!

One, two, ten, twenty... no matter how many \[Heavenly Maidens] attacked, he subdued them with ease!

In the end, the remaining conscious \[Heavenly Maidens] looked at Lü Yang, not daring to approach.

In their eyes, Lü Yang was no longer prey but a beast! Wherever he went, screams echoed!

Who the hell could stop him?

On the other side, Lü Yang remained calm, even showing a hint of disdain in his eyes: "Is that all?"

I haven't even exerted myself, and you're already down?

As for tribulations, in Lü Yang's view, the reason the Precelestial True Person fell here, having his Qi grade degraded, was solely due to one reason:

Lack of ability!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 311 : Essence of All Flowers

[1,187 words]

Chapter 311: Essence of All Flowers

In the realm of 【Void Heaven】 , above the layers of cloud seas.

The Innate True Person sat cross-legged in midair. The various emotions he had displayed earlier during his exchange with Lü Yang had now been restrained, replaced by a cold indifference.

Before him were three light screens.

One of the screens depicted a blood-soaked city, where the 'Innate True Person' was laughing maniacally while tearing a 【Heavenly Maiden】 in half.

This was True Lord Qingcheng Feixue.

Another screen showed the 'Innate True Person' with a resolute Dao heart, viewing beauty as mere skeletons, effortlessly walking out of the grand formation.

This was 【Ang Xiao】 .

The Innate True Person was not surprised by these scenes; instead, he nodded, "As expected of True Lords, the first tribulation was still too simple for them."

"However, they probably won't continue further."

A Golden Core True Lord could already see through the illusions of 【Void Heaven】 and understand that it held no real value for them, so they wouldn't waste more time.

But the third person...

Thinking of this, the Innate True Person turned his gaze to the third light screen.

"...This is true strength!"

In an instant, the Innate True Person's eyes twitched slightly. Compared to the methods of the previous two, the abilities displayed by Lü Yang truly earned his admiration.

As someone who had personally experienced it, the Innate True Person knew well what he had faced back then. To plot against him, the entire Mending Heaven Peak of the Holy Sect had mobilized.

Every time he recalled it, he couldn't help but imagine that if he had just gritted his teeth and held on a bit longer, perhaps he would have been the victor.

Unexpectedly, what he had failed to achieve, Lü Yang had now accomplished.

After a moment of reflection, the Innate True Person closed his eyes with some regret, "However, this person seems to have seen through the essence of it and probably won't take the final step."

"What a pity."

Overseas, at the headquarters of the Immortal Alliance.

Lü Yang's avatar opened his eyes, as clear as a mirror.

He no longer dwelled on the recent events but instead focused on comprehending the newly emerged technique in his mind.

【Mystical Method of the Grand Void Ritual】 !

"This is a method to connect with 【Void Heaven】 . By channeling mana and silently reciting it three times, one can enter 【Void Heaven】 to attempt the tribulation again."

"However, each exploration of 【Void Heaven】 , regardless of success or failure, will extract a portion of one's merit and fortune, requiring time to recover."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's expression turned solemn.

He then opened his palm, and two divine lights of supernatural powers rose from his hand.

【Master of Warfare】 !

【Stubborn Gold Duke】 !

These two innate supernatural powers circled around Lü Yang, but as his consciousness operated, a third divine light suddenly appeared on his body!

It was a pink radiance, and as it manifested, a fragrant aroma wafted out, causing one to involuntarily sink into it, their soul in disarray. Under its illumination, even 【Master of Warfare】 and 【Stubborn Gold Duke】 began to waver, showing signs of losing control.

This was clearly another supernatural power!

"Truly bestowed upon me; this is the reward for successfully overcoming the tribulation? Moreover, based on the performance during the tribulation, the obtained supernatural power seems to differ subtly."

The supernatural power he received was named 【Essence of All Flowers】 .

"According to the feedback from 【Void Heaven】 , this is the highest tier, evidently due to my unwavering will, an act beyond ordinary capabilities."

The next tier of supernatural power was called 【Unshaken Heart】 .

The lowest tier was called 【White Bone Observation】 .

"These three supernatural powers correspond to three methods of breaking the formation. The highest tier is undoubtedly my method, followed by guarding the mind and spirit, and the lowest is indiscriminate slaughter."

The more Lü Yang comprehended, the more he marveled:

"A well-defined system, truly resembling a fruit position. If everyone were to enter 【Void Heaven】 to overcome tribulations, this fruit position might genuinely be achieved!"

"However..."

The next moment, he narrowed his eyes: "...What role did the Innate True Person play in this? Did he truly use his life to validate the fruit position?"

Leaving 【Void Heaven】 as a legacy for future generations? He didn't believe it!

As a True Person of the Holy Sect, Lü Yang had always been inclined to view people from the worst perspective, so he absolutely didn't believe the Innate True Person had any benevolent intentions!

"After all, everyone who enters 【Void Heaven】 does so under the identity of the 'Innate True Person'."

If that's the case, then who ultimately succeeded in breaking through the five tribulations and advancing to True Lord? Was it the 'Innate True Person', or the person bearing his name and identity?

Just thinking about it was deeply unsettling.

"Regardless of whether I have the ability to overcome the tribulation, even if I do, I must stop at the fourth tribulation. The fifth must not be attempted; otherwise, the consequences would be dire."

Of course, this wasn't something to worry about now.

Lü Yang regained his composure and stopped overthinking. The benefits of 【Void Heaven】 were undeniable, and for now, he could continue cultivating through it for significant improvement.

Because 【Void Heaven】 had another advantage.

"This 【Essence of All Flowers】 ... surprisingly doesn't occupy my supernatural power slot!"

According to convention, a Foundation Establishment True Person could only have one innate supernatural power and four innate supernatural abilities in their lifetime, each slot being crucial.

However, the supernatural power bestowed by 【Void Heaven】 was different. Its essence was an illusory entity that could materialize when needed and dissipate when not, akin to nothingness. If not for its actual power, Lü Yang would have thought this supernatural power was fake!

"This method is somewhat similar to the marvel of 【Holding the Law】 ."

But there was a difference between the two.

"Under the marvel of 【Holding the Law】 , I can anticipate the next supernatural power and break through realms, but 【Essence of All Flowers】 doesn't seem to have this effect."

Normally, an additional innate supernatural power for a Foundation Establishment True Person would be a qualitative change.

However, the supernatural power bestowed by 【Void Heaven】 was truly just a supernatural power. While it could enhance combat power, it couldn't effectively elevate one's realm and status.

"Is this the limitation of an incomplete 【Void Heaven】 ?"

"Or is it intentional by the Innate True Person?"

Lü Yang pondered, leaning towards the latter answer. After all, a Foundation Establishment cultivator with five supernatural powers but no corresponding status would be easier to deal with.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's main body in Jiangnan had a sudden thought.

Immediately, a brand-new Myriad Spirits Banner appeared in his palm.

This was something he brought using the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , with all karma cleansed, thus it couldn't be used to attract Dao sins.

"However, its essence shouldn't have changed."

"What exactly is this 【Void Heaven】 ? Before being activated by the innate Dao sin, it should have already existed within the Myriad Spirits Banner, but I hadn't noticed..."

At this point, Lü Yang's thoughts gradually became fervent.

"If it truly resides within the Myriad Spirits Banner, then given time, could it be used by me?"

The Innate True Person used this to validate 【Void Heaven】 .

What about himself?

If his cultivation and realm were sufficient, perhaps he could also use this to validate a fruit position!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,430 words]

Chapter 312: Guiding Feixue, Unveiling Ang Xiao

Never before had Lü Yang so deeply longed for his own astonishing wisdom.

Unfortunately, Ancestor Ting You had suffered severe injuries in his previous life and was still in slumber, recuperating. Not only him, but the entire Myriad Spirits Banner was currently in a semi-defunct state.

'If only I could find a new one to integrate...'

Almost instinctively, Lü Yang thought of another Ancestor Ting You who was still in the Skull Mountain Secret Realm. However, he quickly dismissed the idea.

'...It's not the right time yet.'

The Golden Core sword aura in Skull Mountain had not yet dissipated, and at this point, Ancestor Ting You had not escaped. It was impossible to bring him out.

Although the Sword Pavilion's \[True Lord of Inherited Heavenly Virtue] was not considered exceptionally talented among the True Lords, he was still a Golden Core cultivator. A single sword aura left behind by him would be fatal, even if Lü Yang had now reached the peak of Foundation Establishment. Calculating the time, it would probably take another six or seven years.

'No rush, no rush... Patience leads to success.'

Lü Yang comforted himself. However, at that moment, he suddenly felt something and looked up, a trace of surprise in his eyes.

Ordinary people would probably feel nothing.

But Lü Yang had recently experienced this familiar sensation and instantly recognized it: "Expansion of \[Heaven of Nonexistence]!?"

In an instant, Lü Yang entered the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Not only him, but countless Foundation Establishment True Persons also sensed it, each entering the Foundation Establishment Realm and looking up towards the sky.

'Something... is there!'

Everyone could sense that something had appeared in the mid-air of the Foundation Establishment Realm, but no matter what methods they used, they could not detect its presence.

Anyone who scanned with their divine sense would involuntarily recall a non-existent memory:

『Mystic Method of the Grand Void Ritual』 !

This method, used to connect with the \[Heaven of Nonexistence], was now being widely disseminated, including a wealth of knowledge related to the \[Heaven of Nonexistence].

"Boom!"

Almost simultaneously, several stars in the sky shone brightly, indicating that even True Lords were astonished and moved by the manifestation of the \[Heaven of Nonexistence].

However, what shocked countless people was that, as the starlight of the fruit position descended and the vast divine senses of the True Lords swept over, the \[Heaven of Nonexistence] still appeared as an illusory light and shadow, difficult to touch, as if it were a mirage—ungraspable and unaffected by the True Lords!

"What a \[Heaven of Nonexistence]!"

Capturing a fruit position was already an extremely difficult task, let alone suppressing it. Over the years, only the Pure Land had achieved such a feat.

But the \[Heaven of Nonexistence] was evidently even harder to capture.

To see but not perceive is called "Yi"; to hear but not listen is called "Xi"; to grasp but not obtain is called "Wei".

These three cannot be thoroughly examined, thus they merge into one. Its upper part is not bright, its lower part is not dark. It is a form without form, returning to nothingness, hence it is called the form of the formless.

After several True Lords attempted and found themselves helpless against the \[Heaven of Nonexistence], they withdrew their presence, no longer taking action. Meanwhile, the Foundation Establishment True Persons below, who understood the wonders of the \[Heaven of Nonexistence] through the 『Mystic Method of the Grand Void Ritual』 , all showed expressions of excitement.

At the same time, overseas.

\[Ang Xiao] also opened his eyes and sighed: "What a mysterious fruit position. Mu Changsheng... where did he obtain this fruit position from?"

Although the Innate True Person claimed that the \[Heaven of Nonexistence] was self-proven, \[Ang Xiao] did not believe it, convinced that there must be external factors involved.

Because talent has its limits.

Why is self-proving considered illusory? The reason is simple: how can one imagine something they have never seen? It simply doesn't make sense.

Therefore, \[Ang Xiao] was certain that the Innate True Person must have accidentally obtained a great opportunity; otherwise, it would be impossible to prove such a wondrous thing as the \[Heaven of Nonexistence]. Even Ancestor Ting You back then only created a method for holding a pseudo-Golden Position and did not self-prove a fruit position.

Could the Innate True Person's talent far surpass Ting You?

Impossible!

'It's a pity that due to the interference of the \[Heaven of Nonexistence], the plan to refine the Dao Sin into a clone has failed. Finding another opportunity might not be easy...'

\[Ang Xiao] sighed inwardly.

In the next moment, as a clear, water-like radiance suddenly descended, he vanished, replaced by the figure of True Lord Qingcheng Feixue.

"Tsk, you escaped quickly!"

True Lord Qingcheng Feixue snorted coldly, her beautiful eyes shining with divine light. She vaguely sensed the terrifying depth of \[Ang Xiao], growing more curious: 'Also at the mid-Golden Core stage like me... no, perhaps late stage? How did he break through? He seems to be among the strongest in the late stage.'

Despite this, she showed no fear.

As long as Chong Guang successfully sought the Golden Core, and with her and \[True Lord Zengcai Qiluo] joining forces, forming three of the five elements, she was confident in advancing to the late Golden Core stage.

If he wasn't in the late stage, then there was even less to fear.

She, Xue Feihong, had risen at the end of the great tribulation five thousand years ago, always fighting and winning, known as the most talented in combat over the past five thousand years.

Even if he was in the late Golden Core stage, so be it. If mid-stage, she feared no one!

Thinking of this, she glanced downward.

Lü Yang had naturally awakened, but Hong Ju had not. Since Hong Yun hadn't arrived, a mere Hong Ju was of no concern to her.

With this in mind, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue suddenly smiled sweetly at Lü Yang.

Immediately, a clear and pleasant voice sounded in Lü Yang's ear: "Judging by your reaction, fellow Daoist, you must know who that was just now?"

"...He's called \[Ang Xiao]."

Lü Yang did not hide it, directly stating \[Ang Xiao]'s title. Instantly, thunder rolled through the clouds, yet it had no effect.

Or rather, \[Ang Xiao] had already prepared for his identity to be exposed and was unafraid. After all, his momentum was now established. Even if True Lord Feixue knew of his existence and that \[Chen Earth] was unusual, what could she do? Ultimately, she could do nothing.

"Ang Xiao..."

Upon hearing this, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue fell into contemplation, anger gradually appearing in her eyes. Then, her graceful figure turned and disappeared.

Clearly, this reminder was sufficient.

At that moment, Hong Ju beside Lü Yang suddenly opened his eyes, a flush appearing on his face, while his merit and fortune sharply declined.

'Failed to overcome the tribulation?'

Lü Yang immediately noticed, finding it incredible. Hong Ju was at the peak of Foundation Establishment, yet he couldn't even overcome the first tribulation?

I managed it quite easily.

On the other side, Hong Ju looked grim, sighing: "What a Mu Changsheng, facing such a desperate situation and still not being drained to death..."

Who knew what he had experienced!

The \[Heaven and Earth Intersecting Dragon and Tiger Yin-Yang Grand Formation], with one hundred and eight \[Heavenly Maidens] attacking together, he fought for seven days and nights, yet was still forced to death by the opponent.

'Just this first tribulation is not something ordinary people can overcome. It's unrelated to cultivation level, as everyone enters with the identity of the Innate True Person, only at the peak of Qi Refining. To overcome the tribulation, one must have a firm mind and exceptional talent. Perhaps Lord Hong Yun would have a chance.'

After a long time, Hong Ju finally came back to his senses.

Then he saw Lü Yang beside him, paused, and recalled their mission overseas, his expression darkening.

They had come overseas for the semi-true treasure and the Innate Dao Sin.

Now the Dao Sin was gone, and the semi-true treasure had just been taken away by True Lord Qingcheng Feixue when she left!

'Bastard!'

Hong Ju cursed inwardly, but had to put on a bitter smile: "Fellow Daoist, how about we change the terms? Do you have any other needs?"

"...Not that I don't."

Lü Yang remained calm, having anticipated this: "If fellow Daoist can find me a strand of Shen Metal Qi, I can hand over the method to you."

Upon hearing this, Hong Ju's eyes lit up: "That's easy!"

"Fellow Daoist, come with me!"

Following Hong Ju, Lü Yang quickly arrived at a forest previously isolated by numerous formations to prevent causal investigation. Then, Hong Ju reached out.

A book of talismans floated into his hand.

Lü Yang narrowed his eyes.

It was the fruit position treasure of \[Overturning Lamp Fire], the 『Book of Shared Fate and Altered Fortune』 !

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,248 words]

Chapter 313: Sword Pavilion's Immortal Decree—Another Opportunity?

Lü Yang had long coveted the Fruit Position treasure, the 【Same Fate and Changed Fortune Talisman Book】. After all, it was the most domineering treasure he had ever seen.

With fate as the brush and merit as the ink, any characters inscribed upon the talisman book would directly invoke the power of heaven and earth to come to fruition.

This was already a technique at the level of a True Person, far beyond what ordinary Fruit Position treasures could compare to. It was evident just how much effort Daoist Hong Yun had poured into its refinement back in the day.

"May I know fellow Daoist's name?"

"Yuan Tu."

As soon as Lü Yang finished speaking, Hong Ju immediately extended a finger and lightly tapped the 【Same Fate and Changed Fortune Talisman Book】. In almost an instant, a short line of text appeared.

【Yuan Tu's cultivation is complete; he may seek the Qi of Geng Metal】

The next second, Lü Yang noticed the meritorious fate on Hong Ju's body drastically drop, while a vague sense arose within himself.

'It worked!'

Lü Yang was thrilled. With the help of the 【Same Fate and Changed Fortune Talisman Book】, he directly fulfilled the merit and fate requirements needed to seek the second Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend.

Strictly speaking, it was Hong Ju who paid the price on his behalf. As a naturally-born Immortal Spirit in this lifetime, Lü Yang didn't suffer from cultivation bottlenecks like other cultivators. As long as he found the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend and integrated them into his Immortal Spirit body, he could naturally break through!

"Thank you, fellow Daoist."

Seeing this, Lü Yang smiled in satisfaction. True to his word, he imprinted the secret technique 《Upper Hao Golden Lamp and Jade Light》 with his divine sense and handed it over to Hong Ju.

"No need for thanks, it's just my duty."

Hong Ju accepted the secret technique and, after a brief glance, smiled. His gaze toward Lü Yang softened—what a straightforward person.

He didn't retaliate!

At this thought, Hong Ju's expression grew slightly odd. Divine light began to shimmer around him as his divine sense locked onto Lü Yang.

He intended to go back on his word.

"Fellow Daoist... have you told anyone else about this method?"

"Never."

Lü Yang replied indifferently. At the same time, divine light blossomed around him—two gold and one pink hue, accompanied by an intoxicating fragrance that drifted around them.

【Essence of All Flowers】 !

Seeing this, Hong Ju's expression immediately shifted, as if recalling the time he was utterly humiliated by hundreds of celestial maidens in 【No Existence Heaven】 .

This divine ability from 【No Existence Heaven】 was a heart-bewitching technique. At its peak, it could charm not just living beings but even the dead. As it unfolded now, it penetrated everything, making Hong Ju momentarily feel a reluctance to harm this fellow Daoist before him.

“.Break!”

In the next moment, Hong Ju activated his divine powers and let out a thunderous roar, dispersing Lü Yang's influence. After all, he was still a Great True Person at the peak of Foundation Establishment.

"Divine ability bestowed by 【No Existence Heaven】 ?" Hong Ju narrowed his eyes, a chilling aura in his gaze.

His words carried a hint of killing intent, but Lü Yang remained calm: "What's this, fellow Daoist? Are you planning to keep this avatar of mine here as a guest?"

‘Avatar?’

Hong Ju was taken aback, then frowned slightly and asked tentatively, "Your avatar is so subtle that I couldn't detect it... What wondrous method is this?"

Lü Yang calmly replied, "The Secret Record of Immortal Embryo's Worldly Abode."

"Tsk!"

All the divine radiance around Hong Ju suddenly receded, and his expression turned warm, his smile blooming: "If you had such a miraculous method, you should've said so earlier."

Since Lü Yang could name the secret avatar technique 《Secret Record of Immortal Embryo's Worldly Abode》, Hong Ju believed him mostly. With a superior spiritual treasure as the embryo, such avatars could truly act like normal humans, roaming the world on behalf of the original body. Even if destroyed, the caster would remain unharmed.

In that case, there was no need to offend him.

Better not to pluck the grass if you can't pull out the roots—Hong Ju, also a True Person of the Holy Sect, took the initiative to make amends. He even offered Lü Yang a spiritual treasure.

"A token of apology, fellow Daoist—please don't decline!"

Looking down, Lü Yang saw it was a mid-grade spiritual treasure, radiating divine light. If he integrated it with a Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, it might even become a top-grade one!

"Then I shall accept it respectfully."

"Take care, fellow Daoist!"

With Hong Ju's warm send-off, Lü Yang exited the forest and rode a beam of light, speeding off. Only when he was tens of thousands of miles away did he stop amidst the clouds.

"Hmph, playing games with me?"

He weighed the spiritual treasure Hong Ju had given him in his hand, then sneered coldly and tossed the valuable item off the clouds!

Only after that did he transform into light and leave again.

Not long after Lü Yang departed, Hong Ju silently appeared, holding the very same spiritual treasure he had gifted Lü Yang.

‘This person must be from our Holy Sect—no easy target.’

Hong Ju sighed. He was confident Lü Yang hadn’t seen through his trick. The reason Lü Yang discarded the treasure like trash was simply out of caution.

That couldn’t be helped.

If Lü Yang had truly discovered something, there might have been a flaw to exploit. But when it’s merely cautiousness—that kind of personality leaves little room for weakness.

“So be it.”

With that, his figure dissipated into the breeze.

Jiangnan, Hidden Sword Villa.

Lü Yang’s true body opened his eyes. He showed no remorse for discarding a spiritual treasure that might’ve reached top-grade status. He even tossed the thought aside immediately.

Though he hadn’t noticed anything suspicious, nor was aware Hong Ju had secretly tracked him afterward, it didn’t stop him from believing the treasure was a time bomb. In fact, not just the treasure—even his avatar was a potential bomb in his eyes.

What if someone traced the avatar to find his true body?

Thus, he had no intention of letting the avatar return. Instead, he sealed it away in a hidden location, planning to awaken it only when needed.

Just then, the door suddenly opened.

The usually cold-faced True Person Xiu Xin walked into the chamber. Her expression softened like thawing spring snow, and her beautiful eyes shimmered with tears.

“Master... a message has arrived from the Sword Pavilion.”

“Oh?”

Raising an eyebrow, Lü Yang looked at the flying message talisman handed over by True Person Xiu Xin. Its content was simple—a summoning for all Foundation Establishment cultivators under the Sword Pavilion.

It was signed by **【Dangmo】** .

Lü Yang quickly dredged up this name from the depths of his memory. In a previous lifetime, this Sword Pavilion True Person was the one who conquered the mass grave in Jiangnan!

If that's the case—

“The Sword Pavilion is finally making a move on the mass grave?”

At that moment, Lü Yang suddenly sensed a faint reaction from the direction of his sealed avatar, causing him to narrow his eyes.

‘My opportunity... the Qi of Geng Metal.’

Comparing it to the avatar's location, Lü Yang did a quick calculation and his expression grew odd: ‘...It's toward the mass grave? Is the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend condensing there?’

An opportunity?

No—something felt off!

Lü Yang immediately raised his vigilance. With the 【Tribulation Wave】 in hand, he skillfully used the 【Clairvoyance】 divine power to scan himself.

‘Whew... luckily, I'm not being misled.’

With that, any urge to rush to the mass grave dissipated: ‘No rush. Better to let a puppet scout ahead first.’

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,326 words]

Chapter 314: The Sword Pavilion's Good-Natured Elder?

At the Sword Pavilion, atop the Extreme Heaven Cliff.

This place served as the secluded cultivation site of the 【True Person of Inherited Heaven's Upright Virtue】. With a True Person residing here, the atmosphere naturally differed from the ordinary, exuding an aura that seemed to pierce the heavens even from a distance.

At this moment, numerous Foundation Establishment True Persons were converging upon this location.

Among them were the Ancestor of the Yun Family and True Person Xiuxin; even True Person Xiao Hai of the Li Clan of Sea Harvesting had arrived. The parties harbored mutual disdain for one another.

Soon, the crowd surged into a grand hall.

At the head of the hall stood a Daoist with a shadowy countenance, hands clasped behind his back, gazing at a map hanging on the wall, which depicted the landscape of Jiangnan.

Clad in a black robe, his beard unkempt, and a simple, ancient sword hanging at his waist, he emitted no discernible spiritual light, resembling an ordinary piece of mundane iron. No aura emanated from his body, making him appear like a fallen wanderer commonly seen in mortal realms.

He stood there, wholly absorbed in the map on the wall.

In one corner of the map, he had prominently marked a region labeled the 【Ten Thousand People Pit】 , the implications of which were self-evident.

"Greetings, Daoist Dangmo!"

The assembled Foundation Establishment cultivators landed within the hall, immediately retracting their radiant auras, and respectfully cupped their hands toward the Daoist at the head, their words devoid of any hint of disrespect.

After all, this individual was no ordinary figure.

【Daoist Dangmo】 Ye Guangji was the foremost member of the Ye Family in the Sword Pavilion beneath the 【True Person of Inherited Heaven's Upright Virtue】 , having long accompanied the True Person in cultivation.

A late-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator, a Grand True Person!

Moreover, he was not merely a late-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator; the title 【Dangmo】 was exclusive to the Sword Pavilion, bestowed only upon those with formidable divine abilities.

US EPA

Since Ye Guangji had defeated numerous cultivators in sword duels two hundred years ago and claimed the title 【Dangmo】 , no one had been able to wrest it from him. With

such cultivation, battle achievements, and the backing of a True Person, his status in the Sword Pavilion was self-evident.

The next moment, he slowly turned around.

"Please, no need for formalities."

His calm voice resonated with a metallic clang, as if iron striking iron. Even hearing his voice alone imparted a sense of sharpness akin to a blade's edge.

At this moment, Lü Yang connected to the 【Puppet on Strings】 , observing the hall through the eyes of the Yun Family Ancestor, True Person Xiuxin, and True Person Xiao Hai.

'Strange... there are fewer people than expected.'

Within the spacious hall, although there were more than ten Foundation Establishment True Persons, most were at the early stage, with only two at the mid-stage.

Moreover, he recognized both individuals.

'Ye Xingfeng!'

Following the Yun Family Ancestor's gaze, Lü Yang looked toward a young man exuding intense killing intent in a corner of the hall, recalling the time he was pursued by this individual overseas. Although the man had ultimately perished without a trace, the psychological trauma inflicted upon Lü Yang was immeasurable.

As for the other person, he shared an even deeper connection.

This individual appeared to be seventeen or eighteen years old, with bright eyes, white teeth, delicate eyebrows, and skin like congealed jade. Her heroic demeanor drew frequent glances.

'Ye Guyue.'

Lü Yang's gaze remained calm as it finally settled on the Daoist Dangmo Ye Guangji at the head of the hall, his mind recalling information related to him.

Soon, a peculiar expression crossed his face.

'This Daoist Dangmo... has a rather good reputation in the Sword Pavilion. Everyone considers him a good person, some even deeming him pedantic.'

It was said that although he practiced swordsmanship, he disliked slaughter.

As a True Person of the Sword Pavilion, he had scarcely participated in any righteous-demonic wars, and his sword was rarely stained with blood, leading to criticism from many within the Sword Pavilion.

However, his formidable strength and deep background rendered such criticisms mere gossip; no one dared voice them to his face. Most people still praised him.

'This style feels familiar.'

Lü Yang stroked his chin, recalling that 【Ang Xiao】 had a similar reputation back in the day—a rare good person who never committed evil, the last conscience of the Saint Sect.

But in hindsight, was he truly innocent?

Lü Yang strongly suspected that after committing misdeeds, Ang Xiao used cognitive barriers to erase memories, leading everyone to forget his wrongdoings and regard him as a good person.

Could this Sword Pavilion True Person be the same?

"Fellow Daoists."

At that moment, Ye Guangji spoke, his resonant voice devoid of emotion: "I have decided to proceed to the Ten Thousand People Pit in three days."

This declaration immediately caused an uproar.

"So soon?"

"The Demon Sect has recently bolstered its defenses at the Ten Thousand People Pit, reportedly stationing a Grand True Person there. If we rashly initiate a battle, it might not be prudent."

"Daoist Dangmo, please reconsider..."

The crowd's reaction left Lü Yang momentarily stunned.

Had this occurred in the Saint Sect, if Chong Guang had made such a statement, the only response would have been "As you command," not the current cacophony of objections.

However, he quickly understood the reason. Ye Guangji, despite his high status in the Sword Pavilion, did not display any of the typical Grand True Person's authority. Instead, he nodded patiently, attentively listening to each objection, and responded to them one by one.

This was truly astonishing.

The disparity in cultivation among Foundation Establishment True Persons was vast, especially at the Grand True Person level, where the difference was akin to that between clouds and mud.

In such circumstances, equal dialogue?

Do humans consult ants about what to eat?

'This is abnormal.'

Not only was this behavior abnormal in the Saint Sect, but it was also unusual in the Sword Pavilion, as evidenced by the impatient expressions of Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng nearby.

"Uncle."

Finally, Ye Guyue couldn't help but softly remind him, prompting Ye Guangji to pause and shift the topic: "You all should be aware of the matter concerning the Mystic Spirit Realm."

"Previously, there were rumors suggesting that I had set my sights on the Mystic Spirit Realm."

"Those rumors are not entirely unfounded."

As he spoke, Ye Guangji gestured, causing spiritual light to flash within the hall. A young Daoist emerged from the light.

This Daoist's aura differed significantly from the other Foundation Establishment cultivators present.

Though possessing a physical body, he exuded an unusual sandalwood fragrance. His flesh appeared full, yet inexplicably ethereal, and he carried a strong aura of the mundane world.

It was known that all Foundation Establishment True Persons had established their Dao foundations within the Foundation Establishment Realm, transcending their mortal shells and existing on a different level from ordinary people. However, this Daoist, despite having a similar status to Foundation Establishment True Persons, bore a strong mortal essence.

"Somewhat resembles a Heavenly Official from the Dao Court."

"Who is this person?"

Amidst the crowd's puzzled gazes, the young Daoist solemnly bowed and said, "Mystic Spirit Realm, Great Nation of Baochang, Human Immortal Yu Shao greets fellow Daoists."

Upon hearing this, even Lü Yang's pupils contracted sharply.

【Mystic Spirit Realm】 !

A realm suspected to house a True Person!

Simultaneously, Ye Guangji spoke again: "Previously, there were rumors suggesting that Fellow Daoist Yu attacked me and was captured by me. That is not the case."

At this moment, Yu Shao also forced a bitter smile: "I apologize for the misunderstanding. Daoist Ye's cultivation is formidable; he is considered a reigning Celestial Immortal even in the Mystic Spirit Realm. As a humble cultivator, I wouldn't dare to engage him in combat. The truth is quite the opposite. Without Daoist Ye's assistance, I would have perished without a trace."

'Oh?'

Hidden in the shadows, Lü Yang's gaze flickered upon hearing this. He wasn't the only one; other quick-witted Foundation Establishment True Persons also revealed expressions of intrigue.

"Indeed."

Ye Guangji finally revealed the backstory: "Fellow Daoist Yu was not dispatched by the Mystic Spirit Realm but escaped from there seeking refuge."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 315 : There's a Demon Sect Spy in the Sword Pavilion!

[1,415 words]

Chapter 315: There's a Demon Sect Spy in the Sword Pavilion!

Ordinary people, upon hearing Yu Shao's earlier words, would have focused on the part about "fleeing for refuge."

However, Lü Yang was different.

Other quick-witted individuals also only paid attention to Yu Shao's statement: "Fellow Daoist Ye's cultivation is such that he can be regarded as a Heavenly Immortal even within the Xuanling Realm."

Regarding the Xuanling Realm, the Old Ancestor of the Yun Clan had already explained some information to Lü Yang. Those with merit in the Dao and conduct on the earth, who receive the Heavenly Book and enter the Celestial Court to govern and manage the heavens, are called "Heavenly Immortals." Above the Heavenly Immortals likely lies the realm of True Sovereigns! If that was the case, then what realm did a Heavenly Immortal belong to?

'Peak of Foundation Establishment!'

This was the truly valuable piece of intelligence. The Daoist Dangmo of the Sword Pavilion had silently advanced to the peak of the Foundation Establishment Realm without anyone realizing it!

'If I sell this to Uncle-Master Chong Guang, I can definitely make another profit!'

Meanwhile, the atmosphere in the main hall grew somewhat silent. Lü Yang wasn't the only sharp one—others had also noticed the crucial detail.

However, no one dared to speak it aloud.

After all, a great Daoist at the peak of Foundation Establishment who did not release his aura clearly intended to keep it hidden. Who would dare expose him in such a situation?

Better to play dumb.

The next moment, someone proactively raised a question: "May I ask, fellow Daoist, why are you fleeing? And how did you traverse the realm boundary to escape?"

At that moment, Yu Shao also realized he might have misspoken. Instinctively, he glanced at Daoist Dangmo and, seeing that his expression was unchanged, breathed a sigh of relief and quickly answered, "Our Xuanling Realm governs over a hundred mortal realms, is proficient in traversing methods, and uses the Falling Mortal Realms as anchor points. Crossing realms is not too difficult."

"As for why I fled..."

At this, Yu Shao couldn't help but sigh. "Ever since the new Supreme ascended and took control of the heavens and earth, the immortal laws have become excessively harsh. I truly had no other choice."

These words cast a hush over the hall.

No one present was a fool. Though Yu Shao didn't elaborate, they all could infer that the so-called Supreme was likely a Golden Core True Sovereign of the Xuanling Realm.

Under Yu Shao's narrative, the full picture of the Xuanling Realm began to emerge.

In the Xuanling Realm, the Celestial Court reigned supreme. It was divided into Ghosts, Gods, Humans, Earth, and Heaven—five grades of immortal status, each with its own responsibilities. Only the strongest could ascend to the throne and seize the Supreme Dao Fruit.

It had been over a thousand years since the former Supreme passed away.

During those thousand years, various Heavenly Immortals had fought endlessly until, just over a decade ago, one Heavenly Immortal defeated all others and ascended to the position of Supreme.

At this point, Yu Shao's face turned bitter with resentment. "That man is named 【Huan Shi】. He believes that the endless wars in the Xuanling Realm are due to the absence of order. So he issued immortal laws to restrain all immortals, commanding us to obey and forbidding any more freedom."

"How could anyone endure such severity?"

Yu Shao sighed deeply. "I ruled over the great nation of Baochang. Under these laws, I could not harm mortals—even when dueling with others, we had to seek out secluded places."

"Let alone the fact that all weather and climate matters in Baochang were under my jurisdiction."

"From minor misfortunes to major natural disasters."

"Even the daily rainfall was counted. If it exceeded the amount permitted by the immortal laws, immediate arrest and execution would follow, with no mercy whatsoever."

Yu Shao elaborated on the harshness of the Xuanling Realm, then looked around at everyone, thinking they would feel the same righteous indignation as he did.

However, what he saw instead were faces of nonchalance.

"That's supposed to be harsh? This is it?"

“Forget the Demon Sect in Jiangbei—even the Dao Court is stricter than that. At least these outsiders can escape. In the Dao Court, you can’t even run.”

“And these immortal laws... they protect mortals?”

“If that’s the case, doesn’t it make the Xuanling Realm essentially part of the righteous path?”

Yu Shao: “???”

He was completely bewildered, thinking he had failed to explain properly. He hurriedly added, “Fellow Daoists, you’re mistaken. That Supreme once publicly said—”

At this, his tone grew heavy and he said gravely, “He said that we cultivators devour heaven and earth’s spiritual energy, cultivating only ourselves without nurturing the world. We are but a swarm of locusts devouring heaven and earth. Such blasphemous words—how could that be the righteous path? We are transcendent immortals. How can we be compared to insects and ants?”

When he finished, the others looked at each other, puzzled.

Then Yu Shao heard several Sword Pavilion Daoists mutter with confusion, “What’s wrong with that? The Xuanling Realm has a very clear understanding of itself.”

That cultivators are like insects—this had long been public consensus.

But so what?

The Primordial Saint Sect never cared. The Pure Land was even more indifferent. The Dao Court had its own world, and as for the Sword Pavilion, they believed even insects could be beneficial or harmful.

And they, without question, were beneficial ones.

They consumed the world’s energy only to help it rid itself of harmful pests like the Jiangbei Demon Sect. If anything, the world owed them a karmic debt!

“...”

Yu Shao was completely speechless this time. Something felt off, but all he could do was sigh. “In any case, the Xuanling Realm is likely preparing to invade the southern lands.”

This statement stirred the crowd like a stone thrown into a lake.

“What!?”

“How dare those demons!”

“Another Demon Sect like Jiangbei’s—refusing the righteous path, they must be exterminated! After death, they must reincarnate as menial disciples in our Sword Pavilion to repay their evil karma!”

Faces changed instantly.

Latest novel debut at 69shu.com!

Watching all this, Yu Shao’s eye twitched involuntarily. He couldn’t help glancing at Daoist Dangmo and secretly transmitting: ‘Senior... you’re not part of the Demon Sect, are you?’

“Of course not.”

Daoist Dangmo could only sigh in response and sent back, ‘You should feel lucky you met me. You haven’t seen what a real Demon Sect looks like.’

There were stronger ones?

Yu Shao felt a chill rise in his heart. He hadn’t been here long and only now realized that something might be deeply wrong with this realm.

At the same time, Daoist Dangmo finally spoke, calming the uproar. His voice was firm: “Regardless, according to Fellow Daoist Yu, the Xuanling Realm is about to use the Mass Grave as a springboard to ravage Jiangnan. To prevent the devastation of life in Jiangnan, I intend to go to the Mass Grave and find a way to sever its connection with the Xuanling Realm.”

“However, this must not be known to Jiangbei.”

Daoist Dangmo’s expression turned solemn. The Demon Sect wouldn’t care about invasions. After all, the Xuanling Realm was only barging into Jiangnan through the Mass Grave.

If the Demon Sect found out, they would only welcome it.

They might even offer aid.

It wouldn’t be the first time such a thing happened. A current Golden Core Sect in Jiangbei was once established by a great realm that invaded Jiangbei.

“Therefore, before we act, none of you are to leave.”

Daoist Dangmo looked around at everyone. He had wanted to act earlier, but for some reason, the Demon Sect had learned of the plan in advance. This forced him to wait until reaching the peak of Foundation Establishment before making a move.

And the only people not under the watch of the True Sovereign or present in the Sword Pavilion when the leak occurred were the very Daoists in this hall.

In other words—

‘One of these people is likely a Demon Sect spy!’

In truth, Daoist Dangmo was capable of handling the Mass Grave alone. The main reason he had gathered these Daoists was to root out the hidden infiltrator.

To do so, he needed someone planted among them to test his suspects.

This agent had to be someone loyal, trustworthy, and honest.

With that in mind, Daoist Dangmo scanned the crowd and quickly made his choice.

“Fellow Daoist Yun, I have a favor to ask.”

The Yun Clan, an old Sword Pavilion family that had once produced a True Sovereign, had pure roots. Though they had fallen on hard times, they were still trustworthy.

.....

“Hey, hey, hey?”

In Jiangbei, Lü Yang once again activated his avatar and took out the Flying Message Spirit Book to contact Chong Guang.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,557 words]

Chapter 316: The Influence of Wu You Tian

Jiangnan, Ten-Thousand-Man Pit.

As a "marvel" established by the Primordial Saint Sect in Jiangnan, the so-called Ten-Thousand-Man Pit was no small place; it encompassed an area spanning several thousand li.

Its scale was comparable to that of the Kingdom of Qing.

The reason it was named the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit was because this entire area was a massive abyss-like pit, with layers upon layers of dense yin fiendish energy accumulating within.

The entire Ten-Thousand-Man Pit consisted of ten layers, each layer's yin fiendish energy stronger than the previous, nurturing countless poisonous insects and fierce beasts. Within the pit, they received the augmentation of the yin fiendish energy, capable of corrupting spiritual energy, making their power thirty percent greater than outside the pit. Moreover, the yin fiendish energy within the pit obscured them, making them difficult to detect with divine sense.

Such a perilous place was very much in line with the style of the Primordial Saint Sect.

Unlike the Dao Court's establishment of the Kingdom of Qing, the Primordial Saint Sect never intended to occupy Jiangnan; they simply wanted to disgust people by turning this place into a dead land.

However, that did not mean the place was uninhabited.

On the contrary, the bottom of the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit actually gathered a large number of cultivators, including those from the Primordial Saint Sect, various sects from Jiangbei, and even numerous rogue cultivators.

These cultivators had even jointly established a marketplace.

The reason was simple: resources.

"After all, Jiangnan is wealthy. Under the governance of the Sword Pavilion, the cultivation arts are highly developed, making it an ideal place for speculative trading. This is a highly profitable industry."

Accompanied by the glow of a formation, Lü Yang stepped out.

Of course, this was not his true body; his true body was still within Yun Miaoqing. The one who had come from afar was merely his celestial fetus avatar.

Since delivering the message to Chong Guang that "the Sword Pavilion's Daoist Dangmo is about to attack the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit," Lü Yang had obtained an opportunity to enter the pit. However, to his surprise, the pit did not seem to have entered a state of war readiness due to his message, as if completely unaware.

".Interesting."

Lü Yang strolled through the marketplace, not in a hurry to seek his main objective, the Qi of Metal of Shen, but instead spread out his divine sense to observe his surroundings.

Soon, voices surged forth.

As he had anticipated, the most frequently mentioned and discussed topic was the recently expanding Wu You Tian, which was gradually covering the entire world.

After all, its allure was astonishing.

Breaking through tribulations, if successful, granted a divine ability; if failed, one would not die, at most losing some merit and luck, recoverable after a few months of rest.

More importantly—

"That first trial is too enticing!"

"It's the Primordial Saint Sect's Heaven and Earth Intersecting Dragon and Tiger Yin-Yang Grand Formation, and it's the top-tier version, with the flavor of over a hundred Heavenly Maidens..."

"My grand-uncle has recently become completely obsessed."

"Isn't that so? My sect's True Person as well. He didn't even think about breaking through tribulations; he just wanted to experience the Primordial Saint Sect's methods. It's a pity I haven't reached Foundation Establishment yet."

Lü Yang listened with a peculiar expression. Clearly, for those with no hope on their cultivation path and lacking determination, the Heaven and Earth Intersecting Dragon and Tiger Yin-Yang Grand Formation struck directly at their weakness, unable to withstand the trial. Over time, some even preferred to stay within rather than come out.

Of course, such Foundation Establishment True Persons were few.

Most were rogue cultivators.

And those True Persons with firm Dao hearts, even if they could not overcome the Heaven and Earth Intersecting Dragon and Tiger Yin-Yang Grand Formation, would not sink into it but instead pondered ways to break through.

Thanks to this, Lü Yang noticed a significant increase in the number of dual cultivation techniques.

"Indeed, where there's demand, there's a market."

Lü Yang sighed, but doubts arose in his heart: 'Could it be that the True Lords are just letting Wu You Tian expand unchecked, not caring at all?'

However, he soon heard a conversation.

"That may be so, but everyone shouldn't be too reassured about Wu You Tian. My elder said it might be a backup plan for the revival of the Innate True Person."

"Innate True Person?"

"Yes, the one from five thousand years ago... In short, several Foundation Establishment True Persons seem to have received warnings not to undergo too many tribulation breakthroughs in Wu You Tian."

"Think about it, if you undergo tribulations as the 'Innate True Person,' who comes out in the end, you or him?"

"Maybe in the end, you become a vessel for the Innate True Person's rebirth! The methods of these great True Persons are unfathomable, beyond our imagination."

"But brother, how is 'too many' defined? How many tribulations count as too many?"

"I reckon breaking through one or two tribulations is fine."

"But once you reach three or even four tribulations, the risk becomes significant. Although that Innate True Person said five tribulations are needed to ascend to True Lord."

"But who knows?"

"If it were me, I'd say one or two tribulations, but in reality, just breaking through three tribulations would be considered successful, specifically to trap those honest folks..."

"Hiss... May I ask, brother, which sect are you from?"

"Not talented, a disciple of the Primordial Saint Sect."

"Oh, that explains it."

Such conversations were widespread throughout the marketplace, causing Lü Yang to narrow his eyes, realizing that someone was deliberately promoting and spreading this information.

'The world is vast; one must not underestimate anyone. What I can guess, others can too. In this way, almost all Foundation Establishment cultivators will be wary of Wu You

Tian. If that Innate True Person intends to use this method for revival, it might be a long shot.'

'Is this also why the True Lords are at ease?'

The latest novel is first released on 69shu!

'Come to think of it, even if the Innate True Person is a True Lord, so what? North, south, east, and west—just one True Lord can't stir up much trouble.'

In this world, rogue cultivators truly had a hard time.

Foundation Establishment was still manageable, but True Lords had virtually no hope. Suo Huan and Innate were typical examples; without someone above, how could one progress?

'But... did the Innate True Person not anticipate this?'

Lü Yang was somewhat skeptical. The Innate True Person had been betrayed to death by True Lords back then and should have had a rough estimate of their methods.

'Foundation Establishment True Persons are, after all, a considerable group. No one knows if someone might be driven by greed to break through five tribulations despite the risks. True Lords can't possibly control every Foundation Establishment cultivator in the world. As long as the Innate True Person is determined, he should still be able to find a loophole.'

'Moreover, the True Lords are not a monolith.'

'Not to mention, if Mu Changsheng makes some compromises and accepts certain restrictive measures, at least the Primordial Saint Sect would be very willing to accept a True Lord.'

'This is... a game of strategy!'

Lü Yang gradually came to an understanding: 'The Innate True Person Mu Changsheng is playing a game of strategy with all the True Lords in the world, taking a risky path to forge a Golden Core Dao!'

While pondering, Lü Yang had already stopped in front of a building.

This place was called the Secret Pavilion Street.

As the name implied, this area within the marketplace was somewhat shady, specifically used for "fencing stolen goods," and only Foundation Establishment True Persons could open a pavilion here.

However, being able to carve out such a street within the marketplace for fencing naturally indicated a background linked to the Primordial Saint Sect. According to the information Lü Yang had obtained, it was backed by an early Foundation Establishment True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect named Qi He, over five hundred years old, already in the late stage of his second lifetime.

"Bang!"

Without hesitation, Lü Yang directly entered the deepest shop on Secret Pavilion Street, pushed the door open, and instantly, a mass of black light fell upon him.

However, Lü Yang remained unfazed.

He activated the Stubborn Gold Technique, golden brilliance enveloping him like armor, allowing the black light to fall upon him without leaving a trace.

Immediately after, Lü Yang saw an old Daoist in the depths of the shop.

He had white hair and a haggard appearance, with a heavy aura of old age between his brows. Although he still possessed divine abilities, he was clearly severely eroded by the Bifeng.

As Lü Yang entered the shop, he immediately took out a token and tossed it onto the table:

"I want information related to the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit and the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend."

This Qi He True Person was precisely the hidden agent left by Chong Guang in the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit, usually responsible for gathering information from Jiangnan and the pit to report back to the Primordial Saint Sect.

This was also part of Lü Yang's deal with Chong Guang.

He informed Chong Guang of the Sword Pavilion's movements, and Chong Guang shared information about the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit with him, allowing him to search for the Qi of Metal of Shen.

'Once I obtain the Qi of Metal of Shen, I'll leave immediately!'

In his view, matters like the Xuanling Realm, the Ten-Thousand-Man Pit, and the righteous-demonic war were unimportant; the progress of his celestial body's cultivation in this lifetime was what truly mattered!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 317 : The Primordial Saint Sect Has Indeed Shown Restraint!

[1,331 words]

Chapter 317: The Primordial Saint Sect Has Indeed Shown Restraint!

Upon seeing the token Lü Yang presented, the previously composed True Person Qi He immediately narrowed his eyes, then stood up solemnly and saluted:

“Qi He greets fellow Daoist.”

He then appeared contemplative but soon shook his head, saying, “Apologies, fellow Daoist. There has been no recent news of the emergence of the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend.”

Hearing this, Lü Yang furrowed his brows. After his transaction with Hong Ju, his fortune had increased, allowing him to clearly sense the opportunity of the 【Metal of Shen】 within the mass grave. This indicated that this particular Earth Fiend had indeed manifested there and should have already appeared in the world.

However, he quickly regained his composure.

“In that case, I would like to acquire some superior spiritual materials. Please assist me in gathering them,” Lü Yang said, then directly listed a comprehensive inventory.

Although he had not yet obtained the 【Metal of Shen】 , it did not prevent him from preparing in advance.

Most of the spiritual materials on the list were intended to nourish the Shen metal spirit of his immortal essence, while the rest were for cultivating the 【Dry Heaven All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 .

“This...”

True Person Qi He glanced at the list and then narrowed his eyes, saying, “These spiritual materials... are not impossible to find, but they cannot be handed over to you without compensation.”

Lü Yang nodded, understanding.

In fact, if True Person Qi He had offered them for free, he would have been more suspicious. After all, the Primordial Saint Sect never provided benefits without a price; if they did, it was undoubtedly a trap.

“How much time do you need to gather them?”

“Three days will suffice.”

At this point, True Person Qi He displayed a kind smile. “Jiangnan is rich in talent; collecting spiritual materials here is much more convenient than in the Primordial Saint Sect.”

Lü Yang raised an eyebrow at his words. “Oh?”

True Person Qi He seemed to become more enthusiastic, stroking his beard as he spoke, “Under the rule of the Primordial Saint Sect, there are indeed some unwritten rules.”

“For talented disciples, while they can be utilized, there must be limits. We cannot truly exhaust all our disciples. For some truly outstanding talents, the Primordial Saint Sect is not stingy in nurturing them. Therefore, many True Persons in the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds are somewhat restrained and dare not act too ruthlessly.”

“Is that so?”

Lü Yang opened his mouth, recalling his arduous experiences over nine lifetimes, and was momentarily speechless: So, the Primordial Saint Sect's talent system has indeed shown some restraint?

What other tricks can you possibly come up with?

As they conversed, True Person Qi He led Lü Yang into the inner part of the shop. With a wave of his hand, dozens of jade tokens floated in the air.

Each jade token bore a name.

“These were all personally selected by this old Daoist. They are the children of fortune created by Foundation Establishment True Persons who have opened halls in the 【 Secret Hall Street】 , manipulating karma.”

“Oh?”

This method immediately reminded Lü Yang of the past Yinshan True Person, who had used such a technique on him to lure out the Witch Ghost Secret Realm.

However, the cost of doing so was significant. The children of fortune created in this manner could only exist for one lifetime, essentially borrowing future fortune for the present.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang suddenly had an insight. “Fellow Daoist uses these children of fortune to collect spiritual materials?”

“Exactly!”

True Person Qi He nodded. “Basically, whenever someone places an order, I use these jade tokens to manipulate karma, sending those children of fortune to gather the materials.”

He continued, introducing them as if enumerating his family treasures: “This one has inherited a sword cultivator's legacy; if you want metal-element spiritual materials, I use him. This one belongs to the aquatic race; if you desire water-element materials, he is the top choice. And this one... hmm, this one is also good...”

Through his explanation, Lü Yang quickly understood the entire operational chain.

First, someone approaches True Person Qi He with a request.

Then, True Person Qi He manipulates karma. Whatever spiritual material is needed, he customizes a child of fortune to obtain it. Once they acquire it, he reaps the benefits.

The harvesting method was straightforward.

“In my **【Secret Hall Street】**, these children of fortune, having obtained their opportunities, need to offload their gains. Under my manipulation, they come here, effectively delivering the goods to my doorstep.”

Impressive!

Lü Yang listened in amazement. This was practically a one-stop delivery service. True Person Qi He, using this method, could effortlessly collect a vast amount of spiritual materials without leaving his home.

Indeed, the Primordial Saint Sect has shown restraint!

At least, as far as Lü Yang knew, unless it concerned their own cultivation, no one within the Primordial Saint Sect would create children of fortune on a large scale solely for spiritual materials.

“But this isn't the most ingenious part,” True Person Qi He said with some pride. “The most ingenious part is that by casting such a wide net, there are bound to be some who slip through.”

“Oh? And how does fellow Daoist handle those?”

Lü Yang immediately grasped his meaning. After all, with so many children of fortune, some were bound to achieve Foundation Establishment by sheer luck.

“Why handle them?”

True Person Qi He shook his head. “Those who achieve Foundation Establishment are talents worth cultivating. Our Primordial Saint Sect has always been people-oriented and would naturally not turn them away.”

“And with the Primordial Saint Sect's influence, which rogue cultivator would refuse?”

“In this way, not only do I collect spiritual materials and make a hefty profit, but I also help the Primordial Saint Sect cultivate Foundation Establishment True Persons. It's a win-win situation!”

“I see.”

Although Lü Yang had already anticipated this development, he couldn't help but ask, “But after they achieve Foundation Establishment, don't they mind your actions, fellow Daoist?”

“They are far more ruthless than this old Daoist!”

True Person Qi He grinned. “With such lucrative profits, who would oppose spiritual materials? At least I am willing to give these children of fortune a chance at survival.”

“They, on the other hand, offer no chance at all!”

“After all, 【Secret Hall Street】 is only so big. When they open halls and reap others' benefits, if they allow others to open halls, it will be their turn to be reaped.”

Hearing this, Lü Yang couldn't help but shake his head:

‘Beasts indeed.’

However, he quickly realized, “But fellow Daoist mentioned gathering the spiritual materials I need within three days. Can the children of fortune accomplish this so quickly?”

“Of course not.”

At this, True Person Qi He smiled meaningfully. “This brings us to another service offered in my 【Secret Hall Street】 .”

“This service is exclusively for True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect.”

As he spoke, True Person Qi He took out a formation disk and began setting up formations within the shop right before Lü Yang's eyes:

“My 【Secret Hall Street】 isn't very large.”

“If every so often a Foundation Establishment True Person opens a hall here, the street would be overcrowded, making business impossible.”

“Therefore, periodic cleaning is necessary.”

At this point, a murderous intent flashed in True Person Qi He's eyes.

Lü Yang understood his implication: relying solely on those children of fortune, it would indeed be impossible to gather the required spiritual materials within three days.

But if they targeted Foundation Establishment True Persons, it would be a different story.

Especially those who had opened halls in this 【Secret Hall Street】. While not necessarily wealthy, they certainly had substantial resources, and importantly, they were rogue cultivators.

In Jiangbei, it was well-known: rogue cultivators were the easiest to rob!

“I have selected two Foundation Establishment True Persons from 【Secret Hall Street】. When they arrive and fall into my formations, you and I will join forces to capture them.”

“By then, the spiritual materials you require will be complete!”

After hearing True Person Qi He's plan and observing the formations sealing off the entire shop, Lü Yang sighed sincerely, “As expected of the old Primordial Saint...”

Then, he looked at True Person Qi He:

“So, this is the reason fellow Daoist wants to ambush me?”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,479 words]

Chapter 318: "Do You Recognize Who I Am?"

As Lü Yang's words fell, an instant silence enveloped the surroundings.

Inside the shop, Qi He True Person, who had been fiddling with the formation disk in his hand, suddenly halted his movements. He slowly raised his head and cast a deep glance at Lü Yang:

"As expected of a True Person from our Sacred Sect."([Vatican City][1])

Lü Yang accepted the compliment calmly.

To judge a person's character, one should not focus on their thoughts or words, but rather on their actions. In this way, many matters become clear.

Although Qi He True Person had said many things, appearing to have Lü Yang's best interests at heart, what were his actions? He had used a formation to seal off the entire shop. While his excuse was plausible—using the formation to trap the rogue cultivators of the Secret Pavilion Street—it also served to trap Lü Yang himself.

If Qi He True Person truly had sincere intentions,

then he should not have set up the formation alone. Instead, he should have invited Lü Yang to do it together. But he did not. To Lü Yang, this indicated ulterior motives.

"Such a pity."

At that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from outside the shop. A burly man walked in, his body exuding a strong aura of blood and brilliance.

"Since you've already seen through it, why expose it?"

The burly man laughed heartily: "If you had fled without a word just now, we might not have been able to stop you in time."

"Kui Gang, do not be careless."

A soft and charming voice accompanied by a fragrant breeze followed, as a beautiful woman in palace attire stepped into the shop, saying: "After all, this person is a True Person of the Sacred Sect."

"No need for you to say that, Gou Yue."

The burly man sneered coldly, blocking Lü Yang's escape route along with the palace-attired woman. At the same time, the surrounding formation's brilliance grew brighter.

'Two at the early Foundation Establishment stage.'

Lü Yang shifted his gaze and looked at Qi He True Person, suddenly grinning: "Daring to besiege me, it seems you've advanced to the mid-stage?"

"Ah, fellow Daoist, your insight is accurate."

Qi He True Person sighed upon hearing this, then slowly straightened his previously hunched body. A dazzling brilliance of divine power suddenly appeared on him.

As Lü Yang had expected, mid-stage Foundation Establishment!

Seeing this, Lü Yang shook his head and said: "Fellow Daoist's breakthrough to the mid-stage Foundation Establishment must be thanks to this Secret Pavilion Street. Such a good place, what a pity."

He did not even ask why Qi He True Person had betrayed him.

After all, in the Sacred Sect, betrayal was commonplace. It was nothing unusual, and he did not care about the reasons. In fact, he considered it a pleasant surprise.

'I had intended to pay for the items.'

'But now, it seems that not only will I not pay for the many spiritual items I just purchased, but I might even profit from this. Consider it a generous donation from kind-hearted people.'

Thinking this, Lü Yang became even more composed.

On the other side, Qi He True Person did not become complacent just because Lü Yang had fallen into his trap. Instead, he grew more vigilant: 'This person remains calm despite being in a desperate situation. Could he have some hidden trump card? After all, he was sent by Chong Guang; it's normal for him to have some means.'

In truth, he had not wanted to act against Lü Yang.

As a True Person of the Sacred Sect, no one knew better than he how troublesome a True Person with a proper background could be, and how strong their desire for revenge was.

But many things were beyond his control.

'It's a pity. If I had more time, I could have brought in other Foundation Establishment cultivators from the Secret Pavilion Street. Now, only two are available.'

Despite this, the arrow was already on the string and had to be released.

With this thought, Qi He True Person no longer hesitated and shouted: “Take action!”([UNSD][2])

Before his voice had faded, the burly man, Kui Gang, and the palace-attired woman, Gou Yue, simultaneously formed hand seals and chanted incantations, each unleashing their innate divine abilities.

“Watch my fist!”

Kui Gang clenched his five fingers, and a brilliant divine light enveloped his arm, flowing with his movements. He launched a punch towards Lü Yang from a distance.

【Dragon Coils and Contracts】 !

Kui Gang's innate divine ability was quite unique. Normally, he would accumulate spiritual power, storing it up for a burst of power when needed, resulting in a force far beyond the usual.

In an instant, Lü Yang felt a tremendous force coming at him. If it were not contained within a single punch, its release might have shattered an offshore island.

At the same time, Gou Yue's innate divine ability also fell upon Kui Gang.

【Enhancing Profound Beneficial Talisman】 !

As the name suggests, this innate divine ability was not suited for combat but could greatly amplify others' divine abilities and spells, further increasing the power of Kui Gang's punch.

To be fair, the combined power of their divine abilities was impressive. However, Lü Yang remained indifferent, as both of their innate divine abilities reminded him of the past rogue cultivator Wu Cang, who did not value cause and effect, focusing only on the strength of divine abilities. While powerful, they ultimately lacked adaptability.

Of course, this did not mean there was a problem with this approach.

The issue was that rogue cultivators had limited inheritances. As a result, even if one pursued high values, the final result might not be significant. What was the point then?

“Just these people to kill me? Fellow Daoist, you underestimate me.”

Lü Yang spoke the truth, and a blazing mysterious fire ignited behind him. A towering phantom rose from the ground—it was the **【Heavenly Firmament All-Encompassing Dharma Body】 !**

In the next moment, Lü Yang neither dodged nor avoided.

With the protection of the 【Stubborn Gold Duke】 and the support of the Dharma Body, he also threw a punch. Though his fist appeared much smaller, it collided head-on with Kui Gang's punch.

“Boom!”

Upon impact, Lü Yang remained unscathed, his golden light still dazzling. In contrast, Kui Gang's bones and tendons broke instantly, and he exploded into a mist of blood.

Seeing this, the palace-attired woman, Gou Yue, turned pale: “Mid-stage Foundation Establishment?”

The next moment, she gritted her silver teeth: ‘Scoundrel!’

The gap between early and mid-stage Foundation Establishment was vast. If Lü Yang had revealed his cultivation level, she and Kui Gang would not have dared to act recklessly. They would have turned and fled.

But he had deliberately concealed it!

Not only that, but he also avoided fighting Qi He True Person, who was also at the mid-stage, choosing instead to ambush them at the early stage. Truly shameless!

Even Qi He True Person's expression changed.

He had also failed to see through Lü Yang's cultivation, assuming he was at the early Foundation Establishment stage. Confident in his higher cultivation, he had set up the formation to besiege him.

He had even been cautious enough.

Not only did he set up the formation, but he also called in two early Foundation Establishment cultivators to assist.

Initially, he had them attack first, suspecting that Lü Yang might have some hidden trump card, allowing them to test the waters. He had not expected such an outcome!

What was more troublesome was that he was confident in dealing with an early Foundation Establishment cultivator.

But a mid-stage Foundation Establishment?

Even with the formation's assistance, Qi He True Person had no confidence in killing him. At most, he could inflict serious injuries, which made his expression even more grim.

“Fellow Daoist... can we reconcile?”

Qi He True Person showed a helpless expression: “Kui Gang is dead. His possessions can serve as compensation. I will also offer the spiritual items you previously requested.”

“If fellow Daoist insists on a fight to the death...”

At this point, a sharp glint flashed in Qi He True Person's eyes:

“I am not made of clay. How confident are you that you can keep me here? My time is limited. If you can't kill me, I will entangle you to the end!”

“Entangle me to the end?”

Lü Yang laughed upon hearing this: “Then tell me, fellow Daoist, do you recognize who I am?”

“...Uh.”

Qi He True Person's expression froze. Only then did he realize that Lü Yang had never revealed his background, and he had never seen his face before.

The only thing he knew was that he came from the Sacred Sect and held Chong Guang's token.

Identity? Name?

“Not recognized...”

In an instant, Qi He True Person felt a chill in his heart.

Unable to determine his background or recognize his identity, even if he failed to kill him, Lü Yang could simply change his identity and leave. How could he be deterred?

In contrast, Qi He True Person himself...

He did not want to die!

With this thought, Qi He True Person no longer hesitated. He activated a talisman in his hand, and his figure flashed, immediately riding a beam of light to escape from the shop.

He was fleeing!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 319 : How Could It Be Such a Coincidence?

[1,359 words]

Chapter 319: How Could It Be Such a Coincidence?

"Truly a decisive one."

Lü Yang shook his head. Compared to the itinerant cultivator Wu Cang, True Person Qi He was clearly a bona fide and ruthless Saint Sect true person, utterly vicious and black-hearted.

His only miscalculation was Lü Yang's cultivation level.

But this couldn't be blamed on him—after all, Lü Yang's cultivation was indeed at the early Foundation Establishment Realm, and his breakthrough to mid-stage was only thanks to the mystery of the 【Calamity Wave】 .

This was precisely Lü Yang's advantage.

He had no need to hide. Just standing there, anyone would see him as an early-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator, never suspecting he possessed the combat power of a mid-stage one.

'This move, when used to fish, truly never fails.'

While he mused, Lü Yang's movements were swift. A rosy brilliance sparked at his fingertips, transforming into waves of fragrant mist that spread outwards.

【Essence of Blossoms】 !

As this divine ability unfolded, it instantly engulfed the entire shop, with billowing clouds of intoxicating fragrance rising, disorienting all sense of direction.

True Person Qi He was nothing if not decisive—he immediately used a 【Void Flight Radiant Talisman】 , one of his prized fifth-grade talismans. Unfortunately, the 【Essence of Blossoms】 distorted perception, causing him to believe he was escaping, when in fact he was flailing around inside the shop like a headless fly.

It wasn't until the talisman was spent that he snapped out of it in bewilderment.

"This is... a Void Divine Ability!?"

True Person Qi He looked surprised, while Lü Yang raised his brows slightly. The so-called "Void Divine Ability" was merely the term for divine powers bestowed by the 【Heaven of Nonbeing】 .

The name originated from the ritual manual 《Exquisite Void Sacrifice Method》 that communicated with the 【Heaven of Nonbeing】 .

Despite the 【Heaven of Nonbeing】 having manifested for some time, very few Foundation Establishment true persons had broken through the first tribulation to obtain a Void Divine Ability.

Lü Yang said nothing and merely pointed with a finger. "Commanding Mountain-Moving True Method!"

This spell was extremely sinister. Caught off guard by the sound and motion, Qi He was struck by Lü Yang's finger and immediately vomited mud.

"You really want mutual destruction!?"

While gritting his teeth and forming seals, Qi He revealed another divine ability, which transformed into myriad scenes of mountains and rivers in the blink of an eye.

In an instant, Lü Yang noticed that the spell he had just cast on Qi He had been absorbed out of thin air, unable to harm him anymore.

"This is... Wu Earth?"

Having once cultivated the 【City Wall Earth】 , Lü Yang's attainment in the Dao of Wu Earth needed no elaboration. He instantly recognized Qi He's divine ability.

'Wu Earth corresponds to Shen. Shen is Kun. Only names of cities can describe it. It bears with great virtue, rotates the heavens and sun, carries the sea and rides the mountains—thus, it can give birth to all things. This is called 【Bearer of All Things】 !'

Realization struck Lü Yang: " 【Bearer of All Things】 corresponds to Wu Earth in Shen. This man's second Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend might also contain the Qi of Shen Metal..."

No wonder he wanted him dead!

Saint Sect true persons were always selfish and ruthless—internal conflict was nothing unusual, let alone when personal interests were at stake. Mercy was out of the question.

But this also meant—

‘He must know where the Qi of Shen Metal is!’

At that moment, a chilling killing intent finally emerged in Lü Yang’s eyes. Then, in a flash, he blocked the path of Gou Yue who tried to flee.

“Spare me, fellow Daoist!”

Gou Yue quickly pleaded, “As long as fellow Daoist spares my life, I am willing to offer myself to you—”

“Even if I kill you, I can still make you offer yourself!”

Before her voice fell, Lü Yang’s palm struck her crown. The force of his Dharma Body was unstoppable, instantly pulverizing her alluring body.

The next moment, a banner materialized:

【Banner of All Souls】 !

With a sweep, the banner refined her instantly. Gou Yue was turned into a banner spirit. Lü Yang, expressionless, promptly dispersed this spirit once again.

Then, the innate Qi she transformed into merged into the banner and was absorbed by a near-shattered, dormant banner spirit, gradually awakening it.

“Where... am I?”

The awakened spirit was a handsome youth, though his face looked sickly and bitter, distorting his otherwise charming features.

Banner Spirit Chen Xin’an!

Satisfied, Lü Yang nodded. While he could have used Gou Yue to revive Ancestor Ting You, for the moment, Chen Xin’an was the more practical choice. After all, if he captured Qi He, he couldn’t very well send Ancestor Ting You out. Although with his talents, it wasn’t entirely impossible...

“Boom—”

At that moment, Qi He evidently sensed something was wrong and, without hesitation, blew up the shop they were in!

In an instant, the explosion shattered the seal of the **【Essence of Blossoms】** .

Qi He's heart bled.

He had managed this "Secret Pavilion Street" for so long, investing countless resources. What looked like an ordinary shop was actually a superior spiritual treasure!

Even so, he dared not hesitate.

'Self-destructing a superior treasure should be enough to force this guy back. I'll take this chance to flee. Now that I've been exposed, I must immediately seek out the lord—'

He prepared to flee with his escape light.

But the next moment, his pupils shrank at what he saw:

From the flames of the self-destruction, a blood-drenched, upright figure stepped forth, as if the raging light had been parted by an invisible hand.

'He didn't dodge!?'

Qi He couldn't believe it. He never imagined that faced with the explosion of a superior spiritual treasure, Lü Yang wouldn't evade, but take it head-on!

Meanwhile, Lü Yang smirked. As he was injured, the towering phantom behind him suddenly swelled several times in size.

【All-Embracing Celestial Dharma Body】 !

The mystery of this Dharma Body was that the heavier the injury, the stronger the divine power! He had intentionally taken the hit to push his power to its peak!

Qi He finally reacted.

Immediately, the radiance of **【Bearer of All Things】** emerged to shield him. This divine ability could bear all spells and arts in his place.

Then he saw the towering phantom behind Lü Yang extend a palm toward him.

【All-Embracing】 !

This ability could seize souls and minds, drawing out the soul by force. Yet, it had no effect on Qi He.

But he wasn't relieved.

' **【Bearer of All Things】** ... is full!?'

Even divine abilities had limits. What chilled him was that Lü Yang had used only one technique to reach the full capacity of **【Bearer of All Things】** !

‘But... this also benefits me!’

His thoughts raced. He switched divine abilities—mountains and rivers vanished, replaced by swirling auspicious clouds, manifesting infinite visions.

【Boundless Longevity Dao Foundation】 !

He was clearly ready to risk it all. With his Dao foundation manifesting, he deployed his life-bound divine ability: a vast golden bridge.

【Boundless Golden Bridge】 !

One end of the bridge was beneath his feet, the other vanishing into the void, lifting him as if ascending in broad daylight.

This life-bound divine ability was similar to Lü Yang’s **【Affinity Determination】** , but weaker. Normally hard to activate, but with **【Bearer of All Things】** absorbing enemy force and converting it into fuel, it enabled instant flight across thousands of miles!

“Hahaha!”

Seeing himself on the golden bridge and the path ahead clear, Qi He laughed. “No need to see me off, fellow Daoist!”

But in reply came a soft chuckle.

“Sever!”

In a flash, a sword light illuminated all directions, blocking all of Qi He’s senses, plunging him into a void-like state.

When he recovered, the scene before him made his eyes almost burst.

His highly-anticipated **【Boundless Golden Bridge】** had been cleaved in two. The divine ability dissipated, and his Dao foundation shattered with it!

“Puh!”

The backlash from the broken foundation made Qi He vomit blood. Cracks spread across his Dharma body, and he staggered and fell from mid-air!

【Primordial Mother’s Transformative Light】 !

Lü Yang had long prepared. A white light fell upon Qi He, turning him enchanting. Only then did he look at the newly-awakened Chen Xin'an.

“Go!”

Chen Xin'an: “...”

After a long while, Chen Xin'an handed over the soul-searched information with a pained expression.

Lü Yang took it and froze.

The truth deviated from his guess—Qi He didn't just know where the Qi of Shen Metal was. He already had it in his hands!

In an instant, Lü Yang didn't feel joy, but a bone-deep chill:

‘How could it be such a coincidence!?’

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,311 words]

Chapter 320: Scalding Hot Potato

Lü Yang admitted that he had indeed panicked for a brief moment.

However, he quickly regained his composure, for his Immortal Spirit main body had not yet been seized, indicating that there was still room for maneuver.

‘The main body should not have been exposed yet.’

‘This strand of Shen Metal Qi is likely problematic, probably a bait deliberately set to lure me out. What a wretched place.’

At this thought, Lü Yang couldn't help but sigh.

He then reached out and took Real Person Qi He's storage pouch, opened it using the method provided by Chen Xin'an, and swept it with his divine sense.

The result instantly shattered all his illusions.

A mass of yellow mist was settled at the bottom of the storage pouch, possessing an aura of boundlessness, yet resembling a piece of dull metal, lacking refinement.

Earth Fiend [Shen Metal]!

“Shen is the place where water and earth give birth to life. Though it is metal Qi, it also contains the essence of water and earth. When refined with fire, it becomes swords and halberds; when quenched with water, it gains a sharp edge; if overwhelmed by earth, it becomes buried.”

Lü Yang sighed. He had sent his avatar to the Pit of Ten Thousand Men merely to trace the whereabouts of the Shen Metal Qi, intending to observe the situation before deciding whether to fish in troubled waters and take the item. Unexpectedly, in this back-and-forth, the Shen Metal Qi had directly fallen into his hands, leaving him at a loss.

‘The item has been obtained.’

‘But how to deliver it to the main body? The risk is too great. Perhaps just as I hand it over, someone will come knocking to reset me.’

Ultimately, who was the mastermind behind this?

Lü Yang was aware that by expressing his desire for the Shen Metal Qi through Hong Ju, he had taken a risk, making himself an easy target.

But the problem was, in this wretched place, he couldn't hide!

Without taking some risks, Lü Yang couldn't accumulate enough fortune to sense the Shen Metal Qi, so he had mentally prepared himself during the transaction.

‘Currently, at least two True Lords are watching me!’

‘Ang Xiao, Qingcheng Feixue True Lord, and possibly Hong Yun as well, though he might not care. The key ones are Qingcheng Feixue True Lord and Ang Xiao.’

The scene of [Ang Xiao] silently following him was still vivid in his memory. Although Feixue True Lord didn't seem adept in this field, her cultivation level was too high. For him, there was no difference; monitoring him without his detection was all too easy.

‘However, there's another possibility.’

Jiangnan, Hidden Sword Villa.

Lü Yang's Immortal Spirit main body raised his head, holding the [Tribulation Wave], and under the mysterious enhancement of [Clarity], looked towards the sky, a trace of solemnity in his eyes.

This was a feeling that had lingered since he became an Immortal Spirit.

'Somewhat like the killing intent of heaven and earth.'

But unlike the killing intent of heaven and earth, this aura was more positive. As long as he willed it, the spiritual energy of heaven and earth would spontaneously flow into his body.

'...Heaven and earth's favor?'

Lü Yang knew well that even if his Immortal Spirit main body could deceive anyone, even True Lords couldn't detect it, it was impossible to hide from the heaven and earth that nurtured him.

'It's also possible that this [Shen Metal] is heaven and earth aiding me.'

"After all, I am now an Immortal Spirit, arguably heaven's favorite child."

'But whether it's a True Lord or heaven and earth, they're being too hasty. They could have done it subtly, without letting me notice anything unusual.'

At least if it were him, he certainly wouldn't have made it so deliberate. Instead, he would have set up numerous challenges, making himself go through countless hardships to quietly obtain the [Shen Metal], leading him to believe he had successfully deceived everyone, only to suddenly appear and launch a shameless sneak attack.

'Making it so deliberate only makes me more vigilant. Why?'

While pondering, Lü Yang continued examining Real Person Qi He's memories. Suddenly, his expression changed, his brows furrowed, and his face turned gloomy.

"...Well played, Qi He!"

Previously, Lü Yang hadn't inquired about his betrayal of the Saint Sect, assuming he had defected to Jiangnan. However, he had underestimated the lower limits of the Saint Sect's Real Persons.

This person hadn't just betrayed the Saint Sect but had betrayed the entire world, defecting to the [Xuanling Realm]!

As for the reason for his betrayal, it was quite simple: to extend his lifespan.

'In the [Xuanling Realm], the lifespan of cultivators is entirely different from that of Foundation Establishment Real Persons. Without the [Bi Feng] reducing the soul, there are fewer restrictions on lifespan.'

Even the weakest ghost immortals have lifespans of a thousand years!

And those deities who receive the incense offerings of a nation have lifespans exceeding ten thousand years, not to mention the higher levels of human immortals, earth immortals, and even higher heavenly immortals.

Of course, this doesn't mean that cultivators in the [Xuanling Realm] can rest easy.

'In the [Xuanling Realm], once a cultivator becomes immortal, they face the "Calamity of Dao Transformation." The higher the cultivation, the more easily they are assimilated by heaven and earth.'

'So, although lifespans are long, most ghost immortals don't last beyond three hundred years; deities fall within a thousand years; human immortals might last two thousand years; earth immortals three thousand years; and heavenly immortals ten thousand years. It's essentially another form of [Bi Feng], just not as harsh.'

Though there are flaws, for Real Person Qi He, the temptation was immense.

Moreover, he was already nearing death.

He was in the late stage of his second life, having just broken through to mid-Foundation Establishment. The third life carried significant risks; a single misstep could mean he wouldn't return.

In such circumstances, taking a desperate gamble was understandable.

After all, Real Persons of the Saint Sect have always prioritized profit, putting themselves first. As long as the benefits outweigh the costs several times over, they're willing to take any risk.

And this [Shen Metal] was his pledge of allegiance—a powerful Earth Fiend. For the [Xuanling Realm]'s fruit positions, it was undoubtedly a great supplement.

'No wonder!'

In an instant, Lü Yang realized: 'This is why they were so eager to hand over the [Shen Metal] to me—because this thing was about to be lost!'

Moreover, the [Shen Metal] itself had issues.

Lü Yang learned from Real Person Qi He's memories that he had used a secret method to leave a mark on the [Shen Metal], allowing it to be sensed by the [Xuanling Realm].

Seeing this, Lü Yang was filled with hatred: 'A traitor to the realm! And the secret method he used to mark the [Shen Metal] came from the [Xuanling Realm], originally designed for tracking. It only has the spell to cast, no spell to remove. Now, this [Shen Metal] is clearly a scalding hot potato!'

Xuanling Realm.

As a great realm, the structure of the Xuanling Realm was extremely unique, divided into upper and lower layers. Below were hundreds of mortal realms; above was the location of the Heavenly Court.

The hundreds of mortal realms collectively supported the Heavenly Court. Whenever a cultivator reached the stage of becoming immortal, they could ascend to the Heavenly Court, become a ghost immortal, and then serve as celestial soldiers and generals, accumulating virtuous merits. Once enough merits were gathered, they could be conferred titles, granted a nation, and enjoy incense offerings to achieve deity status.

At the center of the Heavenly Court was the Lingxiao Hall.

This hall, located at the highest point of the Heavenly Court, was the supreme residence. When the Supreme was in seclusion, it was managed by three immortal officials, overseeing all affairs of the Heavenly Court.

At this moment, within the Lingxiao Hall.

On the majestic throne, a man in splendid attire sat with closed eyes, deep in thought. Suddenly, he opened his eyes, a trace of surprise flashing within them:

"[Shen Metal]... has changed hands?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 321 : The Saint Sect Is Still the Same Saint Sect

[1,420 words]

Chapter 321: The Saint Sect Is Still the Same Saint Sect

In the Mystic Spirit Realm, inside the Lingxiao Hall.

The expression of the man in splendid robes changed slightly. He immediately issued an order, striking the great bell. Before long, streaks of light flew in succession toward the Lingxiao Hall.

These were all high-level officials of the Heavenly Court.

All of them were Earth Immortals—nine in total at this moment—and their auras were surging with power. If they were placed in Jiangnan or Jiangbei, they would each be a Grandmaster in the late Foundation Establishment Realm!

"Greetings, Heavenly Official!"

The nine Earth Immortals saluted in unison. In the entire Heavenly Court, only the 【Three Immortal Officials】 had Celestial Immortal cultivation. Presently, only the Heavenly Official had returned to position; the other two seats remained vacant.

"【Metal of Shen】 has changed hands."

The man in ornate robes did not delay, speaking directly, "The agent we developed earlier, Qi He, has likely been exposed. The original plan needs to be revised."

At this statement, the Earth Immortals were all shocked: "Heavenly Official..."

"No need to say more," the man in robes waved his hand firmly. "My mind is made up. If we delay any further, the other side might launch an attack!"

Cultivators from the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 were by no means fools.

Especially those adept at crossing boundaries—they were very experienced in invading other realms. They knew precisely what could and couldn't be done.

Therefore, long ago, the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 had discovered the mass grave's existence but chose not to act recklessly. Instead, they quietly infiltrated, developing agents and gathering intelligence on Jiangnan and Jiangbei. The result? The more they learned, the more terrified they became. Just what kind of bizarre place was this Jiangnan and Jiangbei?

Thirty full fruit positions!?

This single piece of information made the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 completely abandon their plans for invasion, changing their strategy to plunder—strike and retreat swiftly.

And the 【Metal of Shen】 was one of the resources they valued the most.

"Let's act ahead of schedule. I will personally lead the team."

"Eliminate Yu Shao and seize the 【Metal of Shen】 !"

The man in robes said gravely, "Do not worry. I have already reported to the Supreme. The Supreme will personally intervene to shield us, ensuring no accidents occur."

Hearing this, the Earth Immortals could only withdraw helplessly.

'The Heavenly Official... is moving too fast!'

'Then again, it's understandable. Yu Shao's betrayal has massive repercussions. If the other side also has a Supreme, they could trace us using him...'

'But the focus on the 【Metal of Shen】 ... is a bit excessive.'

'Could the rumors be true? That the Supreme ascended hastily, their cultivation unstable, requiring external Qi to stabilize their position in the Heavenly Court?'

'Shh—watch your words!'

Although filled with doubt, none of the Earth Immortals dared slack off and began preparations at once.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang was completely unaware of the changes occurring in the Mystic Spirit Realm.

At that moment, he was deep within the mass grave, inside a grand hall. The confrontation with Qi He had been an unexpected event, and naturally could not be concealed.

What surprised him, however, was that the one overseeing the mass grave for the Saint Sect turned out to be someone familiar—someone he had encountered once overseas in his previous life. His name was 【Jun Tong】 , a Grandmaster under 【Zengcai Qiluo True Lord】 , also a promising candidate for achieving the Great Foundation Establishment.

"So, you're Yuan Tu?"

On the grand seat, Jun Tong's expression was indifferent, with a hint of a smile. "Although Chong Guang mentioned you to me, he never said you were this bold."

"Attacking a Saint Sect Grandmaster in the mass grave?"

"What Saint Sect Grandmaster? This man has long colluded with the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 ."

Lü Yang smiled calmly and tossed the barely breathing Qi He to the ground, then produced the intelligence Chen Xin'an had extracted from him.

Jun Tong was indifferent at first—until he saw the intelligence and the strange, seductive appearance of Qi He despite his aged face.

"...Hoh!"

As a Grandmaster of the Saint Sect in the late Foundation Establishment Realm, Jun Tong had considerable experience. At a glance, he saw that Qi He had been afflicted by the 【Heavenly Mother Transformation Light】 . With a bit of deduction, he immediately guessed how Lü Yang had obtained this intelligence.

In an instant, his expression became much more solemn.

'What a ruthless man!'

Ruthless to others, and even more ruthless to himself. Such a Saint Sect Grandmaster was not easy to deal with. Not to mention, according to Chong Guang, this person had a significant background.

Possibly backed by a True Lord?

Thinking of this, Jun Tong looked again at the intelligence in his hand, collected it without changing expression, then turned to Lü Yang. "Your contribution is not small this time."

"Why not stay in the mass grave and allow me to extend some hospitality?"

"No need."

Lü Yang shook his head. "I'm still undercover in the Sword Pavilion. My identity cannot be exposed. Though this is not my true body, staying here still poses too great a risk."

"Very well then."

Jun Tong agreed readily, watching Lü Yang turn and leave.

Moments later, a figure emerged from the rear of the hall with a dark expression. Jun Tong smiled as he saw him. "Well? Does Fellow Daoist Chen recognize this person?"

"Not at all."

Had Lü Yang still been present, he would have instantly recognized this figure—none other than his former nemesis, the head of Mending Heaven Peak, Chen Taihe!

But Chen Taihe was in no good mood. His eyes were gloomy as he pondered, 'The divine powers used to kill Qi He... seemed like 【Master of Warfare】 and 【Stubborn Gold Duke】 ? With such a divine power setup... could he also be after the 【Pomegranate Wood】 position, just like me?'

Thinking of this, his gaze grew even colder.

He had come at Chong Guang's order to identify a "Saint Sect Grandmaster unwilling to reveal his name."

In the end, he failed to identify the person but instead discovered a formidable adversary.

"Truly don't recognize him?"

Jun Tong asked curiously, "This one's mastery of the Mending Heaven Sutra is astounding. His flexibility of thought—the use of Heavenly Mother Transformation Light was ingenious..."

"Truly don't recognize him."

The Mending Heaven Peak Master shook his head, then lowered his voice. "But this person is sneaky and refused to reveal his identity. His motives are likely impure."

"He claims loyalty to the Saint Sect, but who knows if he'll betray us."

"My lord should have kept him here."

In response, Jun Tong waved his hand casually. "No need. If he really stayed, I would be the one troubled."

"...Oh?"

Seeing Chen Taihe's confusion, Jun Tong remained calm. "It cannot be denied—Qi He acted very discreetly. No one noticed before."

"But three years ago, Chong Guang gave me a hint, and I secretly investigated."

"If I still failed to uncover Qi He's betrayal and his dealings with the outside world, I'd be unfit for my position. That other realm is called the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 ?"

He sneered, "The reason the Sword Pavilion attacked the mass grave is likely for this 【Mystic Spirit Realm】. Coincidentally, the 【Metal of Shen】 that Qi He had was already tampered with by the Mystic Spirit Realm. Now that Yuan Tu has taken it, they will surely not let it go."

"So his departure from the mass grave suits me perfectly."

"As long as he's in Jiangnan, the Mystic Spirit Realm will follow the marker to him. Whatever damage they do, it'll be to Jiangnan—and the Sword Pavilion will be the one to suffer."

"Best outcome would be a fight between the Sword Pavilion and the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】."

"While they bite each other, we conserve strength, then strike when the Mystic Spirit Realm is depleted—harvesting Qi in bulk and reaping huge gains!"

When the snipe and the clam fight, the fisherman profits!

"...Wait!"

Leaving the mass grave, Lü Yang suddenly shivered and frowned. "That Jun Tong... was a bit too casual. He just let me go like that?"

Qi He had colluded with the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】.

That was critical intelligence. Yet Jun Tong hadn't even tried to verify it, simply choosing to believe him. Was Lü Yang really that trustworthy?

Or rather...

'He already knew?'

Lü Yang pondered deeply. He always gave enemies the benefit of the doubt, never assuming a Saint Sect Grandmaster was a fool—especially not a Grandmaster.

So he preferred to think in the worst possible terms.

Shoot the arrow first, then draw the target!

'If he already knew about Qi He and the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】, there's no way he missed the marker left on the 【Metal of Shen】.'

'But he didn't warn me.'

'Not warning me means he harbors ill intent!'

Thinking this far, Lü Yang couldn't help but sigh—The Saint Sect... was still the same old Saint Sect...

'...Diverting disaster eastward?'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,442 words]

Chapter 322: Truly a Good Person?

Jiangnan, outside the Mass Grave.

Above the firmament, a majestic and imposing ship hovered amidst the clouds, its entire form concealed by layers of spiritual light.

On the deck of the ship stood a solitary figure with hands clasped behind his back.

It was none other than Daoist Dangmo, Ye Guangji.

Flanking him on both sides were two direct descendants of the Ye family, both at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment Realm, and old acquaintances of Lü Yang: Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng.

"Uncle, I believe you're being too pedantic."

Ye Xingfeng spoke first, "The 玄灵界 (Mystic Spirit Realm) is, after all, a realm with established positions. We should find a way to capture it, not drive it away."

"Indeed."

Ye Guyue nodded, "I understand your concerns, Uncle. You're worried that the 玄灵界's invasion might cause some damage to Jiangnan."

"Not just some."

Before Ye Guyue could finish, Daoist Dangmo turned his head and interrupted, "Once the 玄灵界 invades, they will inevitably engage in massive slaughter to extract qi."

"By then, centered around the Mass Grave, in the surrounding regions, how many of the hundreds of billions of people will have their families destroyed, how many will be torn apart?"

Ye Guyue nodded, showing understanding, "Repopulating after such a cycle would indeed take decades, not just some time."

"But this is the karma they must bear."

"Our Sword Pavilion has nurtured the people for so many years; isn't it for this very moment?"

"Using them as bait, we can capture all the cultivators from the 玄灵界 alive, and even counterattack into the 玄灵界. The gains would be even greater!"

Daoist Dangmo didn't respond, merely shaking his head, "You don't understand."

Ye Guyue's brows furrowed deeper.

"Uncle, how could I not understand? Life and death are cycles. These mortals are ignorant and unenlightened. They can't see through it, but surely you can?"

"And you can?"

Daoist Dangmo looked helpless, "If you died and couldn't break through the mystery of the womb in your next life, ceasing to be yourself, could you truly let go?"

Ye Guyue's expression changed dramatically, "How could that be the same!"

Daoist Dangmo retorted, "How is it different?"

"I'm a True Person!"

Ye Guyue's expression was solemn, as if stating an absolute truth, "For mortals, seeking the truth is unattainable. Life is but an illusion, a grand dream of life and death."

"But we have already sought the truth and established our Dao foundation. Naturally, we are incomparable to mortals!"

After speaking, Ye Guyue looked at Daoist Dangmo with concern, "Uncle, what's wrong with you? Could it be that something went wrong in your cultivation, leading to a heart demon?"

"..."

Daoist Dangmo opened his mouth but said nothing more, for he could see that Ye Guyue's concern was genuine, without any falsehood.

Yet, the more sincere it was, the more speechless he became.

Fortunately, he didn't need to respond, for in the next moment, he looked outside the ship, and Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng also sensed something and looked over.

In the clouds, a streak of light was flying swiftly.

"Has the Demon Sect discovered us?"

Ye Guyue immediately frowned, while Ye Xingfeng shook his head, "Judging by the aura, it doesn't seem like the Demon Sect. It actually carries the righteous qi of our Sword Pavilion."

In the next moment, the streak of light stopped in front of the ship.

Then, the light split to both sides, and a handsome young man stepped out, his brows exuding sword qi, presenting a righteous appearance.

"I am Lü Yang, greetings to the True Persons of the Sword Pavilion!"

In front of the ship, Lü Yang spoke sincerely, "I am a rogue cultivator from Jiangbei, here to present important information related to the Jiangbei Demon Sect!"

Although he had no evidence, Lü Yang suspected that the Sacred Sect was setting him up.

'Could it be that they're planning to use me as bait to lure out people from the 玄灵界, then kill them and extract qi themselves?'

Unfortunately, unless he gave up the 申金 (Shen Metal), he couldn't escape this trap. Yet, the 申金 was crucial to his cultivation, and he couldn't abandon it.

After much contemplation, Lü Yang made a decision.

'I'll join the Sword Pavilion!'

'I had no choice before, but now I want to be a good person!'

With this thought, after leaving the Mass Grave, Lü Yang directly used the connections of the Yun family's ancestor and others to locate Daoist Dangmo and hurried over.

'This is actually an opportunity!'

'An opportunity to truly join the Sword Pavilion!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang directly presented his bargaining chip, "I understand the rules of the Sword Pavilion and am willing to undergo a reincarnation, cleanse my karma, and then join!"

"...Oh?"

Upon hearing this, Ye Guyue, who had been frowning and about to speak, was momentarily stunned. Then, admiration appeared in her beautiful eyes as she looked at Lü Yang:

"You are quite impressive!"

The Sword Pavilion had a set of rules for accepting Foundation Establishment True Persons from outside Jiangnan.

Just like how the former 承天正德真君 (Chengtian Zhengde True Lord) recruited Ancestor Ting You, the first step to join the Sword Pavilion was to be killed by a True Person of the Sword Pavilion.

Once dead, one would reincarnate.

At that time, the Sword Pavilion would use secret methods to guide them back, then let them be bound by the mystery of the womb, severing ties with their previous life, thus truly becoming a member of the Sword Pavilion.

Only those recruited in this manner could receive the true teachings of the Sword Pavilion. However, once someone became a True Person, who would willingly accept such a fate? Therefore, in most cases, the Sword Pavilion's recruitment was more of a forced acquisition: I kill you, then bring you into the sect, which could be considered your opportunity.

Lü Yang was the first to voluntarily express willingness to do this.

How could Ye Guyue not admire that?

Little did she know that such reincarnation was of no consequence to Lü Yang, as it was merely a split soul reincarnating, having no impact on his true self.

For others, a split soul reincarnation might develop its own consciousness and become uncontrollable.

But for Lü Yang, as long as the Puppet Strings remained, no matter how many lifetimes the split soul reincarnated, it would still be his disguise!

He could even take this opportunity to have the Sword Pavilion help cleanse the True Lord karma from his avatar, completely eliminating any potential surveillance from a True Lord!

Lü Yang's plan was perfect.

However, before he could continue speaking, Daoist Dangmo suddenly waved his hand, "No need for that. Cultivation is arduous; don't speak lightly of reincarnation."

"Uncle!" Ye Guyue immediately frowned.

However, Daoist Dangmo remained indifferent and continued, "As long as the information you provide is valuable and you sincerely wish to join, I can vouch for you."

"..." Lü Yang was stunned.

This Daoist Dangmo was so normal!

Really?

Lü Yang was puzzled, but his expression showed no hesitation as he directly took out the Shen Metal's qi and then laid out his suspicions about the Sacred Sect.

Although these were just speculations, Lü Yang judged by his own reasoning that the likelihood was high.

"The Demon Sect uses the Shen Metal as bait, letting us fight the 玄灵界, while they themselves invade the 玄灵界 to extract qi, reaping the benefits without effort."

After hearing Lü Yang's account, Daoist Dangmo frowned slightly.

On the other side, Ye Guyue's face showed anger, "To use us righteous cultivators as bait to seek greater gains—truly shameless!"

"..."

Daoist Dangmo glanced at her, then looked back at Lü Yang, "This information is indeed valuable. From now on, you shall follow me."

"Thank you, Senior!"

Without hesitation, Lü Yang directly offered the Shen Metal, "I lack the virtue to possess this treasure. I present it to you, Senior. Please accept it."

'Currently, the Shen Metal still bears the mark left by the 玄灵界. It's useless to me. Better to give it to this Daoist Dangmo and have him help cleanse the mark... Anyway,

he's already perfected in divine abilities and doesn't lack spiritual treasures. The Shen Metal is useless to him and will eventually be given to someone else. I'll find a way to take it back then.'

In an instant, several plans formed in Lü Yang's mind.

However, in the next moment, all these plans were shattered.

"No need." Daoist Dangmo solemnly said, "The Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiends are crucial to cultivation. Your acquisition of this qi is your fortune; there's no need to forcefully offer it to me."

"I'm also aware of your concerns."

"In this battle, I still need you to lure the 玄灵界's people. After it's over, I will help you remove the mark left on the Shen Metal."

At this point, Daoist Dangmo smiled warmly.

On the other side, Lü Yang could hardly believe what he was hearing. Could someone in this wretched place truly speak such righteous words?

Truly a good person?

There must be a scheme!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,190 words]

Chapter 323: Rise Again! My World-shaking Wisdom!

Outside the Mass Grave, in a secluded mountain forest.

Amid a burst of intense white light, more than ten figures emerged. They neither stood out nor appeared extraordinary—at first glance, they seemed no different from ordinary mortals.

These were the people of the Xuanling Realm!

Leading them was a Heavenly Immortal from the Xuanling Realm, the head of the current Three Immortal Officials, known by the Daoist title Minghua, who was also a close confidant of the Xuanling Realm's Supreme.

Following behind him were three Earth Immortals and seven Human Immortals.

After all, the Xuanling Realm's intent was to rob and flee, so only a third of its high-level figures had been dispatched, while the rest remained behind.

“How far are we from the Mass Grave?”

Before Minghua finished speaking, a Human Immortal stepped forward and cupped his hands. “Master, the position locked by the Inter-Realm Anchor is a thousand miles away.”

This Human Immortal was named Chengxian.

Though only a Human Immortal, he was Minghua's direct disciple. Minghua's Daoist lineage traced directly back to the Xuanling Supreme.

If Minghua was the Crown Prince, Chengxian was akin to the Emperor's grandson.

Thus, none of the three Earth Immortals objected to his response. Instead, they each focused inward in silence.

Seeing this, Minghua nodded internally, quite satisfied with their deference. He then continued, “Well done, Chengxian. The Mass Grave formed from the Luofan Realm is too conspicuous. If we teleported directly there, and the enemy was prepared, we'd be in danger.”

“Heavenly Official's insight is clear.”

Only then did the Earth Immortals voice their agreement.

After reprimanding his subordinates, Minghua shifted topics. “Enough. Our targets this time are only two: Shen Jin and the traitor Yu Shao!”

The former was for harvesting Qi to nourish the Xuanling Realm.

The latter was to eliminate future threats, as the Xuanling Realm's plan was a smash-and-grab. Naturally, they had to prevent any locals from becoming informants.

“Both have been marked with the Taiqing Resonance Talisman.”

“Together, we'll deduce their location—they won't escape!”

Under Minghua's command, everyone began casting spells and forming seals to track the two targets. However, they soon fell silent in surprise.

Minghua even raised an eyebrow. “The two targets are together?”

His senses told him that Shen Jin and the traitor Yu Shao were indeed in the same area, less than three thousand miles from their current location!

‘A trap?’

The thought sprang to Minghua’s mind but quickly passed. Even if it was a trap, so what?

‘According to intelligence from Qi He, that Primordial Saint Sect rules the Jiangbei region. Its acting sect master is only at the peak of Foundation Establishment, about equal to me. Aside from that, they barely have any Grandmasters, let alone Earth Immortals. I can handle this. Worst case, I flee.’

Besides, he wasn’t alone this time.

‘I’ve heard nothing from Qi He about Yu Shao joining the Primordial Saint Sect, which suggests he’s with the Sword Pavilion.’

‘But with his strength, how many allies could he muster?’

‘No matter what, we have one Heavenly Immortal, three Earth Immortals, seven Human Immortals... unless the Supreme himself intervenes, we have the upper hand!’

In Jiangnan, aboard a boat—

After being accepted by Daoist Dangmo, Lü Yang was granted permission to retreat in a secret chamber aboard the vessel, ready to digest his recent gains.

First, he sealed the chamber with a formation.

Ensuring that no one could probe with divine sense—and if they tried, he’d be alerted. Only then did he retrieve a storage pouch.

Inside, aside from Shen Jin, were the assets of Qi He True Person and most of his Secret Hall Street holdings. With Qi He now deceased, the inheritance had naturally passed to Lü Yang, who unceremoniously dumped it out and summoned a towering apparition.

Universal Sovereign Form of Heaven’s Dominion!

The form ignited with mysterious fire like a pill furnace, ravenously devouring all the spiritual items Lü Yang laid out, refining them indiscriminately.

Gradually, a feeling of fullness surged.

‘Reached the limit...’

Lü Yang realized that his form had hit its current ceiling. To advance, he'd need to harvest Qi again.

“According to the ‘Universal Dominion Divine Law of Heaven’s One Principle’, cultivating the Universal Sovereign Form involves five steps. The first, which I’ve completed, is condensing the form itself. The next three involve refining its essence and discarding the dross.”

“Step two, discard the ‘Form’—”

“From then on, no longer bound by shape, the form can merge and separate from the body at will.”

“Step three, discard the ‘Universal’—”

“No longer confined to imagery, capable of myriad transformations.”

“Step four, discard the ‘Dominion’—”

“No longer forcefully controlling everything; instead, harmonizing with nature, with instant, natural responses.”

“Step five, discard ‘Heaven’—”

“Leaving only ‘Sovereign’—that’s the true attainment of the Wanwu Realm, fully drawing it into the main world!”

Five Qi harvests—each harder than the last.

Especially the final step, which provokes ferocious backlash from the Wanwu Realm—few peak Foundation Establishment Grandmasters could survive it.

This second-grade divine method was not for the faint-hearted.

Latest novels first released at 69 Book Bar!

‘Still, for me, it’s just five resets. As for re-entering the Wanwu Realm... I may not even need the Saint Sect.’

‘After all, I hold the corresponding “Universal Dominion Divine Law”. If I give it to the Sword Pavilion, their True Person could extrapolate the Wanwu Realm’s location. The only issue is that doing so would hurt the Saint Sect’s interests—’

What? This lifetime I’m with the Sword Pavilion?

No problem then!

Lü Yang, satisfied, looked again at Shen Jin, stashed him away, and then took out the Myriad Spirits Banner.

On the banner, aside from Chen Xin'an, who had just awakened after devouring Gou Yue, was another banner spirit—Kui Gang, the brawny man from before.

'It's time.'

Lü Yang took a deep breath, then shattered the Kui Gang banner spirit, using his dissipating true spirit and innate Qi to nourish the still-slumbering Ancestor Ting You.

“Rise again! My world-shaking wisdom!”

Though the ancestor had once reached peak Foundation Establishment, he hadn't returned to that stage in his fifth lifetime, so a single Foundation-level spirit was more than enough.

Soon, a figure emerged within the banner.

“.Hm?”

Ancestor Ting You appeared in light and shadow, his eyes first dazed, then suddenly enlightened. He looked at Lü Yang and sighed:

“The calculations are over?”

“Ancestor sees truly.”

Lü Yang nodded. The Myriad Spirits Banner, refined by the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes, allowed the spirit to retain all past memories—though its understanding had been altered.

To Ting You now, all past events with Lü Yang were merely predicted futures, not reality. This moment was the real present. Any inconsistencies had been smoothed over—the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes had patched every bug.

“Thank you for your trouble, Ancestor.”

Lü Yang respectfully bowed, fully sincere, then laid out all the techniques he had acquired in this life.

『True Explanation of the Void-Observing Heaven and Earth』

『Brilliant Golden Cup and Jade Radiance』

『Mystic Rites of the Grand Void Sacrifice』

The first was for creating blessed cave-heavens, the second sensed the Overturning Lamp Flame, and the third connected to the Heaven of Non-Existence.

Each was of high quality and great value—yet Lü Yang suspected something was off, though he couldn't pinpoint what.

“...”

Staring at the three secret techniques in hand, Ancestor Ting You cast a helpless glance at Lü Yang, then shook his head. “Fine, let me study them first.”

Lü Yang's face lit up. “Thank you, Ancestor!”

Good! My world-shaking wisdom is about to shine again!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,413 words]

Chapter 324: Hope of Returning to the Peak!

To Lü Yang's surprise, this time, Ancestor Tingyou did not take long.

After merely a few hours, Ancestor Tingyou emerged from the All-Spirits Banner once again, his face showing a look of realization, along with some admiration and astonishment.

Lü Yang blinked upon seeing this. “So fast?”

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Tingyou glanced at him and said irritably, “It's already considered slow. After all, I had previously organized the Emptiness Proof Method of this Innate True Person.”

Only then did Lü Yang recall.

Previously, when Chen Xin'an was overwhelmed by the Dao of Death, he had handed over all the information he had obtained to Ancestor Tingyou. It seemed that the accumulation from that time had paid off.

“What about the other two books?”

“No need to look at the other two.”

Ancestor Tingyou shook his head. "Each of those two has its own problems. They are of no use to you and will only mislead you."

"..."

Lü Yang was speechless but not surprised. After all, both 『True Explanation of Observing Heaven and Earth in Emptiness』 and 『Upper Hao Golden Lamp Jade Light』 were obtained within the cave heaven.

Strictly speaking, those were things left behind by 【Ang Xiao】 .

Although he had memorized the contents of the secret methods before, he had never practiced them, merely trading them with Hong Yun. Now it seemed that was indeed a wise decision.

That inherently evil old ghost 【Ang Xiao】 !

After cursing 【Ang Xiao】 in his heart once more, Lü Yang felt a bit of sympathy for Hong Yun. This True Lord was truly unlucky.

Not only was he inexplicably trapped and killed in the great calamity five thousand years ago, but his soul was also extracted and refined by 【Ang Xiao】 , losing most of his memories. Even the backup plan for his return was taken away. Now, he finally had a glimmer of hope, yet it was just bait released by 【Ang Xiao】 . Truly, life was worse than death.

If it were me, I would have restarted long ago.

What? Hong Yun can't restart?

Then never mind!

Lü Yang collected his thoughts and turned to Ancestor Tingyou, eagerly asking, "So, Ancestor, what insights have you gained? Is there a problem with this method?"

"Well, the method itself does have issues."

Saying this, Ancestor Tingyou spread his hand and took out the 『Mystical Method of the Great Void Ritual』 connected to 【Wu You Tian】 , confidently saying, "But it's not a big problem."

A gleam of spiritual light flashed in Ancestor Tingyou's eyes. "According to my calculations, this secret method should have a backdoor, intended to reclaim the divine powers granted by 【Wu You Tian】 when necessary. Besides that, it has a deeper purpose, though I haven't yet comprehended it."

"But as for the first layer, I can find a way to patch it."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang's face immediately showed joy. "Ancestor, do you mean you can let me permanently possess the divine powers granted by 【Wu You Tian】?"

"You could say that."

Ancestor Tingyou nodded. "It's not difficult. Just reverse the 『Mystical Method of the Great Void Ritual』. I just created a targeted secret method."

Lü Yang opened his mouth in astonishment.

Just now, created a targeted secret method?

Is that even humanly possible?

"Oh right, there's one more thing."

At this moment, Ancestor Tingyou suddenly lowered his voice. "When operating this 『Mystical Method of the Great Void Ritual』, the All-Spirits Banner seemed to respond as well."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes. "So the All-Spirits Banner indeed!"

He had previously suspected that his All-Spirits Banner likely contained an unformed 【Wu You Tian】, but he never had evidence to prove it.

Now, the evidence had arrived!

"Ancestor, can you sense it?"

"You can't?"

This simple exchange made Lü Yang fall silent for a moment, while Ancestor Tingyou suddenly realized something and quickly took out a jade slip to write and draw on it.

"Alright, I've modified the part of the 『Mystical Method of the Great Void Ritual』 that senses 【Wu You Tian】, changing the target to our All-Spirits Banner. The sensing method has also been simplified. The content is basically at a level you can understand. Try it and see if you can sense it?"

Lü Yang: "..."

Although Ancestor Tingyou's words were full of concern, Lü Yang still felt a certain form of insult. However, he soon became cheerful.

My talent is indeed unparalleled!

Looking at the secret method he created based on his talent, Lü Yang found the content indeed concise and easy to understand. He immediately nodded in satisfaction and began to operate it.

'It's really there!'

It was still the same All-Spirits Banner, yet at this moment, Lü Yang's perception was entirely different, as if he saw a vast and boundless realm!

In the next second, Lü Yang felt his consciousness fall from that realm back into his physical body in the present world. However, simultaneously, a mighty power originating from that realm was forcibly drawn out by him at the moment of their gaze and fell into his body!

"Hiss!"

In an instant, Lü Yang saw the 『Essence of All Flowers』, the Great Void divine power he obtained from 【Wu You Tian】, bloom with myriad splendid colors!

If the previous 『Essence of All Flowers』 was merely a delicate and beautiful dead object.

Then at this moment, it came alive!

"This is... the inherent rank of the innate divine power!"

Lü Yang's pupils contracted. The original Great Void divine power had no rank. Even if obtained, it only increased the number of divine powers but did not elevate the realm.

But now, it was different!

As the brilliance of the 『Essence of All Flowers』 merged into himself, Lü Yang clearly felt his realm ascending, breaking through the bottleneck of the mid-stage.

Three divine powers, Foundation Establishment mid-stage perfection!

At this moment, Lü Yang even felt a bit unreal. In his previous life, he had exhausted all means to reach this realm. In this life, he achieved it so quickly?

'No, not yet. In my previous life, I even falsely held the position of a Great True Person. In this life, I'm still a bit short... but not far! If I enter 【Wu You Tian】 again and break through a tribulation, I can obtain two Great Void divine powers. Combined with the mystery of 【Holding the Law】, I'll have four divine powers!'

Foundation Establishment late-stage, Great True Person?

Before Lü Yang could wake up from his beautiful reverie, suddenly, the 『Essence of All Flowers』, which had just been active, suddenly lost its divine brilliance.

In an instant, the living thing returned to being a dead object.

Lü Yang clearly felt the mighty power he had just drawn out being inexplicably pulled back, along with his magical power.

"Hu..."

Lü Yang's face instantly turned pale, then he exhaled a deep breath. After a long while, he recovered. "Ancestor, what's going on?"

Ancestor Tingyou's figure quietly appeared, his expression calm, obviously having foreseen this scene. He said indifferently, "Although it's just a nascent form of a fruit position, it's still a colossal entity for you. Even a slight rank enhancement is more than you can bear. Getting injured is normal."

Lü Yang's foundation was still too weak.

If his cultivation were at Foundation Establishment perfection, he could immediately draw the mysterious power from the All-Spirits Banner. Under the Golden Core, who could stop him?

Unfortunately, it couldn't be changed.

With his early-stage Foundation Establishment cultivation, without the 『Essence of All Flowers』 as a Great Void divine power as a guide, he couldn't draw out even a bit of mighty power.

'I see... but it's enough!'

Lü Yang's eyes flickered, quickly calming the emotional fluctuations brought by the disparity: 'Even if it's only for a short time, the improvement in my strength is a qualitative change!'

At this moment, Lü Yang's mood was extremely urgent.

He wanted to venture into 【Wu You Tian】 again!

As long as he could obtain another Great Void divine power, he could grasp the combat power of a Great True Person level in a short time, directly returning to the peak state of his previous life!

'For this, even if 【Wu You Tian】 truly has risks... it's worth the gamble!'

At this moment, Lü Yang suddenly looked up.

Almost simultaneously, Daoist Dangmo, who was standing with his hands behind his back at the front of the boat, seemed to sense something, sighed, and looked into the distant sky.

"Whoosh whoosh!"

A cold wind blew, but in an instant, it turned into a bone-chilling, flesh-slicing gale. The world turned entirely red, as if stained with blood, illuminating a blazing celestial fire.

And beneath the celestial fire, several figures stood gracefully.

"It's them!"

Beside Daoist Dangmo, the Human Immortal Yu Shao from the 【Xuanling Realm】 turned pale, trembling as he said, "It's Minghua Celestial and the others—they've all come to kill!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,372 words]

Chapter 325: Reentering the Void Heaven!

Gazing at the cultivators of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 gathering outside the boat, Lü Yang's face bore no trace of joy; instead, a profound chill settled in his expression:

'I was right. Beasts!'

The Holy Sect had indeed used him as bait!

No, damn it, what Holy Sect? It was clearly the Jiangbei Demon Sect! How could one cultivate properly among such a group of evildoers?

For a moment, Lü Yang even began to suspect the Sword Pavilion. After all, he had witnessed the eccentricities of these sword seeds from Qi Refining all the way to Foundation Establishment. Although that Daoist Dangmo appeared to be a good person, one could know a face but not a heart. Who knew if he would sell him out too?

'...No, I must find an opportunity to enter the 【Void Heaven】 !'

Although entering the 【Void Heaven】 with his consciousness would leave his physical body defenseless, Lü Yang could use the 【Puppet on Strings】 to circumvent this flaw.

He made this decision with confidence.

The world was vast, and heroes were as numerous as carp crossing the river. He was certainly not the only one to have broken through the First Tribulation; in fact, he was lagging behind many.

With the large-scale opening of the 【Void Heaven】 to the outside world, relevant information had long since leaked out.

Therefore, Lü Yang was already aware of the Second Tribulation within the 【Void Heaven】. Precisely because of this, he felt confident in overcoming it.

‘It’s worth a try!’

With this thought, Lü Yang immediately immersed his mind into his sea of consciousness, operating the 『Mystic Ritual of the Grand Void』 to begin connecting with the enigmatic 【Void Heaven】.

“Here I am, Minghua.”

High above the sky, the Celestial Immortal Minghua stood with hands behind his back, his gaze immediately landing on Daoist Dangmo. His heart settled:

‘Only one person!’

On the entire boat, only Daoist Dangmo was a Grand Daoist at the peak of Foundation Establishment. Besides him, there were just Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng, both at mid-stage Foundation Establishment.

As for the remaining elders of the Yun family and others, although there were about ten of them, all were at early-stage Foundation Establishment, not even worth Minghua's attention. In contrast, his side had himself, a Celestial Immortal, three Earth Immortals, and seven Human Immortals. No matter how one looked at it, they held the advantage.

‘...Victory is ours!’

Thinking this, Minghua Celestial Immortal calmed considerably: “Fellow Daoist, hand over Yu Shao and 【Shen Jin】, and today we can part peacefully.”

In his view, this was a situation akin to Mount Tai crushing an egg.

However, Daoist Dangmo was, after all, at the peak of Foundation Establishment. Minghua Celestial Immortal didn't want to push him too hard, hence the thought of subduing him without a fight.

Yet, in response, he received a pair of pitying eyes.

“Fellow Daoist, you should return quickly.”

Daoist Dangmo sighed and said, “As far as I know, you should have some understanding of this place. Haven't you realized yet?”

Minghua Celestial Immortal blinked upon hearing this. Of course, he had investigated. A world with thirty fruit positions was indeed terrifying. But before coming, he had already invited a Supreme to act, concealing their presence. At this moment, no one could detect them. As long as they struck swiftly and retreated, what could stop them?

This logic was sound.

Was there something wrong?

Minghua Celestial Immortal couldn't comprehend the implication of Daoist Dangmo's words and simply sneered coldly: “So, you're refusing a toast only to drink a forfeit?”

“Activate the formation!”

As Minghua Celestial Immortal's words fell, clouds surged, and the world transformed. Looking around, the sky and sea of clouds turned into a thousand-mile expanse of red wilderness. A blazing sun burned fiercely in the sky, with rolling heat waves filling the surroundings, making it feel as if one were inside a pill furnace. The consumption of magical power suddenly increased!

‘The 【Great Sun Patrol Heaven Diagram】 is complete!’

Minghua Celestial Immortal was exhilarated. This formation, combined with a supreme treasure of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , possessed the power to trap the heavens and earth, burning mountains and boiling seas!

However, at the same time, the people inside the boat remained utterly calm.

Even the Yun family elders and others at early-stage Foundation Establishment showed no fear in the face of this terrifying formation that could crush them. Some even seemed amused.

“Uncle?”

Ye Guyue looked at Daoist Dangmo beside her. Seeing his brows tightly furrowed, she showed a surprised expression: “Are these outsiders a threat to you?”

Daoist Dangmo shook his head solemnly: “This formation harms the harmony of heaven. The blazing sun patrols the heavens. If not controlled, it may inadvertently harm the mortals below.”

Upon hearing this, Ye Guyue understood that her uncle's old habits were acting up again. She whispered, “Uncle, why be so pedantic? It's just a few mortals. Even if you truly care for them, you should quickly eliminate these people. Otherwise, delaying will be of no help.”

“I understand.”

Daoist Dangmo appeared contemplative and soon made a decision: “No rush. Let's first retreat and elevate the battlefield to a higher place.”

The higher the battlefield, the less likely it would affect the mundane world.

As his words fell, Daoist Dangmo pointed skyward with two fingers. Without even drawing his sword, he uttered thunderous words, and layers of luminous illusions appeared behind him:

“To contend over a word and kill, is to value righteousness above oneself. Thus, it is said: Nothing is more precious than righteousness!”

In an instant, the layers of illusions condensed, manifesting jade towers and celestial palaces, which then transformed into countless golden rays bursting forth!

“Boom!”

This eruption instantly shattered the divine consciousness of almost everyone present, making them feel like lone boats in a storm, swaying and drifting. Even Minghua Celestial Immortal felt dizzy and disoriented, his ears ringing, and before his eyes appeared an immense, indescribable world—

【Profound Virtue Blessed Land】 !

‘What is this!?’

Minghua Celestial Immortal couldn't comprehend what he was seeing. When his vision cleared, he realized that the battlefield had been inexplicably elevated!

His pupils contracted sharply, sensing something amiss for the first time.

‘This world, and its inhabitants... are all wrong!’

The 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 had nothing like this!

At this moment, it wasn't them besieging Daoist Dangmo, but rather they had fallen into Daoist Dangmo's 【Profound Virtue Blessed Land】 !

Meanwhile, inside the quiet chamber of the boat.

Lü Yang sat cross-legged, his split soul already journeying beyond the heavens, while his physical body was controlled via the 【Puppet on Strings】 , constantly monitoring the external situation.

'Why aren't they fighting?'

Lü Yang was somewhat surprised. Although Daoist Dangmo had made a move, he remained restrained and showed no intention of engaging in a full-scale battle with Minghua Celestial Immortal.

Why?

Before Lü Yang could figure it out, the next moment, he saw Daoist Dangmo suddenly release a beam of blessed land light, which fell directly onto his secluded chamber!

'Is he trying to harm me!?!'

Lü Yang became instantly alert, yet remained calm, even feeling somewhat unsurprised: I knew there were no good people in the Sword Pavilion!

However, he then widened his eyes.

That beam of light enveloped his chamber but didn't forcibly break it open. Instead, it wrapped around it layer by layer, providing tight protection.

'Is he... shielding me?'

'Trying to protect me?'

Protecting me specifically—does he have ulterior motives?

While Lü Yang was still suspicious, he noticed that Daoist Dangmo's actions hadn't stopped. Beams of light descended, enveloping everyone inside the boat!

He was protecting everyone!

In an instant, Lü Yang almost doubted his own eyes.

But being a keen-minded person, although he couldn't understand Daoist Dangmo's actions, he instantly realized this was a great opportunity.

'Regardless of his intentions, it doesn't matter.'

'As long as I seize this chance to obtain the second Grand Void Divine Ability and temporarily restore the power of a Grand Daoist, I can protect myself in any situation!'

'One must rely on oneself!'

With this thought, Lü Yang hesitated no longer.

His mind immersed into the 【Void Heaven】 !

After a brief moment of disorientation, Lü Yang's split soul opened his eyes.

Immediately, a strong sense of sorrow welled up in his heart. These emotions surged through his sea of consciousness like a breached dam, leaving him increasingly bewildered.

Who am I? Where am I? What is this place?

After a long while, this split soul gradually calmed down, his eyes clearing as if he had finally sorted everything out. He murmured to himself:

"I am an Innate True Person."

"I am Mu Changsheng."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,298 words]

Chapter 326: Why Not Cheat?

"Damn it, so insidious!"

In the southern region, at the Hidden Sword Manor, Lü Yang's Celestial Spirit body clearly saw the predicament his soul fragment had fallen into through the 【String Puppet】 .

This was also the crux of the second tribulation.

‘According to current reports, the second tribulation in 【Void Heaven】 is completely different from the first. This time, cultivators do not retain their past memories.’

‘Their past identities are veiled, and they genuinely integrate into the identity of a 【Innate True Person】. Although their memories will quickly return after leaving 【Void Heaven】—as if waking from a dream—this setup clearly has issues no matter how one looks at it!’

‘Fortunately... I only sent in a soul fragment!’

So far, Lü Yang had never let his main body's divine sense enter 【Void Heaven】 due to suspicions and a reluctance to act recklessly.

The risk of mental contamination was secondary. What if 【Void Heaven】 could lock onto a person?

If his main body entered 【Void Heaven】 first, and the Innate True Person immediately sensed: “Huh? There’s a Celestial Spirit here? Let me have a look...”

Even though no Innate True Person had yet demonstrated the might of a Golden Core True Lord, and 【Void Heaven】 was significantly weaker compared to other realms, Lü Yang wouldn’t gamble on whether the other party had such strength. He wouldn’t entertain any lucky thoughts—better to let the soul fragment suffer.

‘Besides, there’s a benefit to this approach.’

This was why Lü Yang was so confident he could break through the second tribulation—because his main body could support the soul fragment from outside!

Ordinarily, this would be impossible.

Many True Persons of the Sacred Sect had tried; even sending in a soul fragment to 【Void Heaven】 would sever its connection with the main body, making cheating unfeasible.

But Lü Yang was different.

‘The connection of the 【String Puppet】 cannot be cut off by 【Void Heaven】!’

With this thought, Lü Yang grew even more energized. While monitoring the battlefield where Daoist Dangmo was engaged, he concentrated fully. He intended to blitz through the second tribulation!

“I’ve already reached the peak of early Foundation Establishment.”

At this moment, the soul fragment that had fully integrated into the identity of the 【Innate True Person】 sighed with emotion: “My innate divine ability is accomplished. Merit, fortune, and cultivation are all intact.”

“I even obtained the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend powers.”

Before it floated a shimmering mass of waterlight—this was 【Ren Water】 , the most yang and pure water under heaven, manifesting as clouds in the sky and marshes on the ground.

Memory told it that refining this 【Ren Water】 would allow a breakthrough to mid-Foundation Establishment, bringing it closer to its ideal goal. But in the next second, a massive wave of sorrow and long-suppressed despair surged forth, darkening its expression.

“But... what’s the point?”

The next second, he flung away the 【Ren Water】 before him, face twisted with fury: “My path is broken! Even if I refine it, I can’t attain fruition!”

The scenes from the first tribulation came to mind.

【Heaven and Earth Clashing Dragon-Tiger Yin-Yang Grand Formation】 , one hundred and eight 【Heavenly Maidens】 —that battle had left him utterly broken and scarred.

And it had severed his path forward.

“My original intent was in 【Endless Flowing Water】 , but now, with a fourth-grade True Qi foundation flawed from the start, my highest cultivation this life will be Foundation Establishment perfection!”

“Worse, with a path of no regrets, I can’t even start over.”

“Bastards... this is too much!”

Where lay the path forward?

At this, Lü Yang’s soul fragment grew even more disheartened, and outside, his main body realized the true difficulty of this tribulation.

‘To be fully immersed, truly taking on the plight of an 【Innate True Person】 , and then to find a way out—only by wielding the Dao heart as a sword to sever all confusion and obstacles can one break the tribulation.’

Undoubtedly, breaking this tribulation with one's Dao heart would significantly enhance both spirit and temperament.

Provided you don't cheat like Lü Yang.

Still, Lü Yang felt no envy. Compared to some growth in spirit and temperament, his own safety was what he valued most.

With that, he activated the 【String Puppet】 .

In his view, this tribulation was actually easy to break. Even ignoring the threat of the Innate True Person, his main body entering it would also be confident in breaking through.

Because to him, this difficulty was trivial.

If he were caught in such a tribulation, he wouldn't feel sorrow or rage. His instincts would produce just one simple thought:

'Why not cheat?'

Was it out of reluctance?

Lü Yang slightly modified this thought, then transmitted it into the soul fragment's consciousness, prompting the same idea to irresistibly emerge.

"Start over. That's it!"

"It's just a matter of beginning again! As long as I commit suicide and reincarnate five times, my soul will be purified through the power of reincarnation, and I'll be able to start anew!"

"I've got it!"

With those words, the soul fragment, fully immersed as the 【Innate True Person】 , didn't hesitate. He drew the magical sword from his waist and, with a bold swipe across his neck—

"Splurt!"

In 【Void Heaven】 , above layers of cloud seas.

The Innate True Person sat serenely on a cloud, countless streaks of light before him, each representing a Foundation Establishment cultivator undergoing tribulation within 【Void Heaven】 .

“Hm? Someone else has broken through the second tribulation?”

Suddenly, he opened his eyes, a pleased expression flashing across his brows. He looked toward one of the streaks: “And at such speed?”

Upon recognizing Lü Yang’s soul fragment in the light, he was even more surprised: “It’s this one... Could it be a covert directive from the True Lord behind him?”

Intrigued, the Innate True Person grew more interested.

“How did he break through the tribulation?”

Back then, facing a hopeless dead end, he had nearly gone mad, enduring countless trials to finally pierce the fog and rebuild his Dao heart.

In his view, there were only three ways to break the second tribulation.

The first, the supreme method, was to use the Dao heart to overcome the tribulation. Even when all seemed lost, one pressed forward with unwavering determination.

The second, a middling approach, was to muddle through—abandon thought and push ahead.

The third and worst was to give up, accepting one’s mediocrity without a trace of despair or any drive to improve.

Regardless of method, all counted as escaping the inner demons of despair.

Yet, he still ranked the first method highest—for cultivation was like climbing a perilous peak. Without a firm Dao heart and extreme resolve, how could one attain the Dao?

At that moment, the Innate True Person opened his mouth wide, the corners splitting grotesquely, his formerly celestial visage transforming into something monstrous. He swallowed the light bearing Lü Yang’s image. After a moment of sensing, his expression grew increasingly strange:

“Suicide to reincarnate and start over?”

“Isn’t that a bit extreme?”

The Innate True Person could feel the soul fragment’s emotions—it wasn’t despair, nor apathy, but a true belief that this was a viable solution.

“If I attain true fruition, whether true self or other self, it is still me. If I do not, then there’s no difference between them...”

Gradually, the Innate True Person fell into silence.

After a long while, he came to his senses and suddenly burst out laughing: “Good! What a fine ‘start over’! Truly a firm Dao heart, not something ordinary men could achieve!”

In this world, who isn’t afraid of death? Who isn’t wary of reincarnation?

With a path of no regrets, who can begin again?

And yet, here was someone who viewed reincarnation as nothing, seeking only to 【start over】 —so much like himself.

He had calculated everything, plotted for years, and become this twisted form, all for a chance to retain himself and 【start over】 .

If even he would go so far—

How much greater was this one’s resolve, who cared for nothing but to start again? Even the Innate True Person couldn’t help but feel a sliver of respect for such a Dao heart.

“If he attains fruition, then indeed, I have been taught.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,416 words]

Chapter 327: Sword Seed, Seeking Death!

While Lü Yang was assisting his split soul in overcoming tribulation within the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 , he did not neglect to monitor the battlefield between Daoist Dangmo and the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 .

To be honest, he felt a bit concerned.

After all, Daoist Dangmo was alone. For some reason, the Sword Pavilion had not dispatched any other reinforcements, and the rest were merely a few insignificant individuals.

However, upon reconsideration, Lü Yang regained his composure.

In his view, the cultivators of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 were still too naive. What kind of place was this? Did they truly believe that everyone would engage them on equal footing?

'Not to mention that the Sword Pavilion only sent Daoist Dangmo, likely due to immense confidence in him. Even if a crisis did arise, would the True Lords of the Sword Pavilion merely stand by? At the very least, that 【True Lord of Celestial Virtue and Righteousness】 from the Ye family would surely unleash a sword qi from afar!'

After all, they had experience in such matters.

Back then, how formidable was Ancestor Tingyou? Yet, he too was slain by a single sword strike. To a True Lord, there was little difference between early-stage and peak Foundation Establishment cultivators.

However, Lü Yang soon realized he had been naive.

There was no need for a True Lord to intervene.

High above the sky, Daoist Dangmo stood with hands behind his back, his sword unsheathed. Merely by manifesting the scene of his blessed land, he halted all the cultivators from the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 !

"Fellow Daoist, cease your actions."

Daoist Dangmo sighed, "The Four Directional Dao Lords have set their plans, using the myriad worlds and heavens as sustenance."

"Your 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 is relatively large, with a preserved divine status. Having had limited contact, there's still time to escape. If you sever ties with this realm promptly, perhaps there's hope for survival. Otherwise, in due time, your entire realm will be plunged into misery."

Daoist Dangmo spoke earnestly, yet Immortal Minghua could not comprehend.

Dao Lord? What realm was that?

More importantly... he always believed he was fine. Although Daoist Dangmo's strength exceeded his expectations, he still felt confident of victory!

"Summon 【Lingyang】 !"

In the next moment, Immortal Minghua performed a hand seal, and a celestial fire appeared above his head, resting in his palm, radiating infinite light and heat. The

orange-red brilliance spread in all directions, distorting all things, as if everything was about to be drawn into the celestial fire in his hand!

This treasure was his greatest trump card for this expedition.

Named 【Lingyang】 , as the name suggests, it was essentially the sun of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , refined by the supreme beings of the realm!

"Boom!"

In an instant, the blazing celestial fire resembled a gluttonous beast, mercilessly devouring everything around it, causing Daoist Dangmo to frown.

He did not fear such methods.

However, behind him, Ye Guyue, Ye Xingfeng, and even the early-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators could not withstand it. Clearly, Immortal Minghua had noticed this.

'You wish to protect these people!'

'Truly a pedantic fool. Since that's the case, I'll use them to distract you. As your energy wanes, no matter how formidable you are, you won't be my match!'

Immortal Minghua's calculations were precise. At this moment, he activated 【Lingyang】 , and waves of orange-red fire surged forth, clearly aiming for widespread destruction, encompassing not only the real persons behind Daoist Dangmo but also intending to annihilate the fertile lands below!

Witnessing this, Daoist Dangmo finally shed his compassionate expression and placed his hand on the sword at his waist.

The sword was named 【No Killing】 , its hilt embedded with the patterns of the Northern Dipper Formation, wrapped with five-colored shark silk to attract lightning, the sheath covered with the hide of the Black Tortoise bearing a map, and the tassel tied with the fruit of the Taiyi Green Thorn.

"...Heaven's Will."

A faint sigh.

Before the words faded, sword intent soared into the sky. Daoist Dangmo drew a three-foot stream of light from its sheath, instantly engulfing the visible world.

This sword, at its inception, resembled the Milky Way breaking through clouds, its momentum like a white rainbow drinking from a stream.

Wherever it passed, the wind solidified into crystals, light stagnated into rosy clouds. Before the sword's whistle arose, it had already shattered the sun and reversed the flying fire, with residual shadows arriving, still tearing through the nine-layered clouds.

The sword light condensed frost into blades, shattered jade into brilliance, entwined with blue and white hues, resembling a blue dragon holding the moon, striking precisely into the vast sea of fire conjured by Immortal Minghua, engulfing it entirely, soaring into the sky, and finally exploding at the zenith.

"Swish swish!"

What should have been a thunderous roar fell into a gentle breeze, with only residual light forming a green luan chasing the sun, and sword qi dispersing into a white deer holding a branch.

'What a magnificent sword light!'

Such a scene, Lü Yang observed clearly. Compared to this sword, the sword lights displayed by other real persons of the Sword Pavilion could not even be called swords!

This was by no means the power of a divine ability!

'No wonder the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion dares to claim supremacy in combat. This sword must embody the true essence of the Sword Pavilion... simply unimaginably powerful!'

Immortal Minghua, along with the three Earth Immortals behind him, were all swept away by Daoist Dangmo's sword, falling at the zenith, drifting down like snowflakes, leaving only seven Human Immortals, comparable to mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators, remaining in place, their expressions panicked, each drenched in blood, simultaneously severely injured!

"Attack!"

Almost simultaneously, Ye Guyue transmitted via divine sense, "They've been struck by Uncle's 【No Killing Sword Intent】 , their combat strength now less than half of their peak!"

Immortal Minghua, after all, was at the peak of Foundation Establishment in the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 .

Combined with three Earth Immortals comparable to late-stage Foundation Establishment, even Daoist Dangmo couldn't kill them all with one sword; there had to be some entanglement and struggle.

If Daoist Dangmo disregarded others' lives, he could undoubtedly unleash his sword freely. However, since he aimed to protect others, he naturally had to exert more effort. Thus, he not only brought Immortal Minghua and others to the zenith but also deliberately dispersed his sword qi, severely injuring the remaining seven Human Immortals.

Everything was arranged meticulously.

In his calculations, with such a situation, Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng should be able to conclude the battle, as both were real persons of the Sword Pavilion and direct disciples of a True Lord.

However—

"Xingfeng, later, don't use your full strength."

Amidst the action, Ye Guyue secretly transmitted to Ye Xingfeng beside her, "Uncle is pedantic, susceptible to inner demons. We should share his burdens."

"Share burdens?" Ye Xingfeng was somewhat puzzled.

"Exactly!" Ye Guyue said solemnly, "【Shenjin】 is a rare treasure of heaven and earth, to be possessed by the virtuous. How can we let that scattered cultivator Lü Yang from Jiangbei have it?"

"Uncle's refusal is his folly."

"That scattered cultivator resides in Jiangbei, already entangled in karmic debts. Allowing him to reincarnate into the Sword Pavilion is already a heavenly grace. How can we further indulge him?"

Ye Xingfeng deeply agreed but couldn't help frowning, "But if we take 【Shenjin】 , how do we explain to Uncle?"

"That's simple." Ye Guyue said coldly, "Later, you deliberately leave an opening."

"Let these outsiders kill that scattered cultivator. Once he's dead, 【Shenjin】 becomes ownerless. We can then retrieve it and naturally explain to Uncle."

"As for that scattered cultivator, if he dies, so be it."

"This can be considered his fate, sending him to reincarnation. At most, we'll guide him into the Sword Pavilion in the future, accept him as a disciple, and repay the karma."

Upon hearing this, Ye Xingfeng immediately nodded, "Agreed!"

With this thought, the sword lights in their hands instantly slackened.

The two sides were already engaged in fierce battle. The seven Human Immortals from the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , led by Chengxian, immediately noticed this flaw.

'Opportunity... seize 【Shenjin】 first!'

Chengxian didn't hesitate. He immediately rode a stream of escape light, passing through Ye Guyue's obstruction, and, following the induction of 【Shenjin】 , charged into the boat!

On the other side, Ye Xingfeng was also 'coincidentally' entangled by other Human Immortals.

"Boom!"

In the next second, Lü Yang's secluded chamber was directly shattered, revealing the scene within.

Within the shattered chamber, Lü Yang's split soul returned from the 【Heaven of Non-Existence】 , opened his eyes, and the four divine abilities in his sea of consciousness shone brightly!

"Heh heh..."

Lü Yang's main body constantly monitored the battlefield. How could Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng's little tricks escape his notice? At this moment, he naturally sneered coldly:

'Sword Seed... seeking death!'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,193 words]

Chapter 328: Your Karma Has Arrived

Although a murderous intent surged within him, Lü Yang refrained from taking immediate action. After all, in this lifetime, he intended to join the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion and live as a righteous man.

"Boom!"

In a flash of lightning, Cheng Xian, a Human Immortal from the Myriad Spirit World, appeared before him. Yet, at the same moment, another figure intercepted him.

“Yu Shao!”

Cheng Xian's gaze turned icy, then he burst into laughter. “Perfect timing! Today, I'll capture all of you. One day, the Three Immortal Officials will surely have a place for me!”

Despite the Demon-Slaying True Person having just displayed immense power—his sword light sweeping away Minghua Heavenly Immortal and three Earth Immortals, leaving them all severely injured—Cheng Xian felt no fear. Instead, an inexplicable excitement surged within him.

‘Actually, I could have escaped just now?’

Such thoughts barely surfaced before Cheng Xian swiftly suppressed them.

Ye Guyue had deliberately left an opening. In the past, he would have seized the chance to flee. But now, his mind was consumed by a single thought:

‘Eliminate Yu Shao, reclaim the Shēn Gold!’

Driven by this thought, Cheng Xian didn't hesitate. He channeled his full power, and a thunderous incantation burst from his mouth:

“[Heal], [Expel]!”

With the roar of thunder, Cheng Xian's previously grievous injuries began to heal at a visible rate, returning to a pristine state in the blink of an eye!

Witnessing this, Yu Shao's expression darkened:

“True Word Technique!”

In the Xuanling World, cultivation differed from the Foundation Establishment Realm. It wasn't about combining various divine abilities to achieve ultimate sublimation, but about perfecting a single divine ability to its pinnacle.

Ghost, Spirit, Human, Earth, Heaven.

These five levels of immortality—Ghost Immortal and Spirit Immortal—were about accumulation. Only upon reaching Human Immortal could one receive the Heavenly Court's blessing, sense the natural world, and ultimately comprehend a [Technique].

Elevating the [Technique] to a [Law] marked the Earth Immortal.

Elevating the [Law] to a [Dao] marked the Heavenly Immortal.

If the [Dao] aligned with the Heavenly Court, one could disseminate their doctrine across the world, manifesting the true law of heaven and earth, thus ascending to the Supreme position.

Cheng Xian, inheritor of the Supreme Dao Law of the Xuanling World, had comprehended the [True Word Technique]. Should he ascend to Earth Immortal, he could transform it into the [Heavenly Constitution True Law]. Advancing further, it could become the [Supreme True Immortal Dao], currently the foremost doctrine in the Xuanling World.

The so-called [True Word Technique]—as the name suggests—was the power to make the world obey one's words. Each incantation was akin to a divine ability, capable of producing incredible effects!

For instance, at this moment.

Cheng Xian used the [True Word Technique] to temporarily negate the effects of his injuries, restoring his combat strength to its peak.

However, this wasn't truly making the world follow his words. The so-called expulsion of injuries was only temporary. Once Cheng Xian's power was exhausted and he could no longer maintain the [True Word Technique], the suppressed injuries would return, not only unhealed but exacerbated several times over!

'Prolonged battle is disadvantageous... I must end this quickly!'

Though Cheng Xian had no thought of fleeing, he remained clear-headed. With a thought, he channeled thirty percent of his power to his throat:

"[Death]!"

Life and death are unpredictable. This single word was the most lethal in the [True Word Technique]. As it was uttered, it directly targeted Yu Shao.

In an instant, Yu Shao's entire body was enveloped in a dense aura of death. Without any warning, he inhaled once but couldn't exhale a second time. His face turned pale, and he staggered back, mustering all his strength to resist the overwhelming drowsiness invading his mind.

He couldn't withstand even a single move!

Though both were Human Immortals, Cheng Xian's utterance of the word [Death] nearly caused Yu Shao's immediate demise. Such power caused both Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng to feel a heavy weight in their hearts.

'This person truly has some skill.'

'If not for Uncle's intervention, a solo battle with him would have a fifty-fifty chance of victory.'

'But this is perfect. Let him kill Lü Yang; that would be making the best use of him. With his strength, Uncle can't accuse us of inadequate protection.'

In magical duels, divine abilities don't discriminate.

A slight misstep, and death is commonplace.

With this in mind, Ye Xingfeng and Ye Guyue exchanged glances, understanding each other's intentions. Ye Xingfeng quietly summoned a sword light and positioned himself behind Lü Yang.

Though they planned to let Cheng Xian kill Lü Yang, the Shēn Gold was of immense importance. They couldn't truly let Cheng Xian have it. So, the plan was to use Lü Yang as a shield. Once Cheng Xian exhausted himself killing Lü Yang, Ye Xingfeng would seize the treasure. Given Cheng Xian's depleted state, he wouldn't be able to resist.

All of this happened in a flash.

In the next second, as Yu Shao retreated in panic, there was no one left to block Lü Yang. Cheng Xian once again gathered his full strength and shouted:

"[Execute]!"

This word was no less powerful than [Death]. Instantly, layers of heavenly light burst from his mouth, first illuminating Lü Yang.

Countless golden threads wove together, forming a massive net that ensnared Lü Yang, rendering his body immobile. Then, an invisible killing intent descended, like a guillotine, slicing down upon Lü Yang with unstoppable force!

First declare, then kill—that is execution!

Almost simultaneously, behind Lü Yang, Ye Xingfeng, while fending off several Human Immortals, channeled all his power, ready to seize the treasure at any moment.

However, in the next instant.

Lü Yang raised his head, a smile appearing on his face. His lips parted, skin cracking, and with a breath, he transformed into rolling waves of smoke!

'[Sea of Sorrow]'

After returning from [Nonexistent Heaven], he was granted this second Taixu divine ability. Like [Essence of All Flowers], it was of the highest grade, but its mysteries were entirely different.

Lü Yang's body exploded under the influence of this divine ability, turning into billowing smoke that quickly covered most of the sky, resembling a vast ocean. Cheng Xian's [Execute] word passed through this smoke without effect.

Ineffective?

“Ah!!!”

Before anyone could react, a heart-wrenching scream erupted from the smoke that Lü Yang had become.

“Xingfeng!?” Ye Guyue's expression changed dramatically.

Cheng Xian's full-force attack, though missing the now smoke-formed Lü Yang, struck Ye Xingfeng, who was behind him!

Originally, Lü Yang was to face Cheng Xian's full-force attack. Regardless of whether he survived, Ye Xingfeng would act. If Lü Yang died, perfect—he'd kill Cheng Xian amidst the chaos and reclaim the Shēn Gold. If Lü Yang survived, it didn't matter—he'd finish him off with a sword, settling their karma.

But Lü Yang dodged.

Now, the unfortunate one was Ye Xingfeng.

In mid-air, Ye Xingfeng staggered, his skin evaporating violently, his body cracking, with power continuously pouring out.

Unstoppable!

Worse still, he was simultaneously battling several Human Immortals from the Xuanling World, who now took the opportunity to strike mercilessly.

“Boom!”

In the next moment, Ye Xingfeng was struck by several beams of light. His already fragile body couldn't withstand it and exploded into pieces!

Meanwhile, the smoke receded and reformed into Lü Yang's figure. His robe fluttered, clouds swirling from his sleeves, enveloping him. He appeared ethereal, like an immortal. His exceptionally handsome face showed genuine sorrow:

“Sigh!”

“Senior Brother Ye, your karma has arrived!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,484 words]

Chapter 329: "Brother Ye, I Have Avenged You!"

In that instant, everyone was stunned.

Cheng Xian and the other Human Immortals from the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 were shocked that someone could be killed under such circumstances, while the disciples of the Sword Pavilion were purely astonished that Ye Xingfeng could be slain.

Ye Guyue widened her beautiful eyes in disbelief.

‘Impossible!’

Although Ye Xingfeng was only at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment and had not yet reached perfection, he possessed a high-quality Sword Pill, making his actual combat strength formidable for his level.

How could he be severely injured by Cheng Xian's single strike, leading to his demise?

It made no sense!

With this thought, Ye Guyue abruptly shifted her gaze, staring intently at Lü Yang, who wore an expression of deep sorrow.

“Was it you? Did you dare to harm a true person of our Sword Pavilion?”

“Fellow Daoist, please do not speak recklessly.”

Lü Yang sighed, his face showing unmistakable grief. “Brother Ye and I hit it off at first sight. We had no prior enmity. Why would I want to harm him?”

Lü Yang believed these words would be enough to silence Ye Guyue.

However, he underestimated the Sword Pavilion's sense of righteousness. Ye Guyue responded with a look of moral indignation, stating without hesitation:

“Of course, it's because we wanted you dead!”

“You must have discerned the intentions of Xingfeng and me, so you deliberately set a trap to harm him! Ungrateful rogue cultivator... truly the demon of Jiangbei!”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang stared directly at Ye Guyue, who appeared composed, seemingly unaware of any wrongdoing in her words. Instead, she became even more resolute:

“If you were to die and reincarnate, perhaps you would have the chance to join our Sword Pavilion in the future. But to think you are so malicious!”

“Unappreciative!”

With this thought, Ye Guyue's gaze toward Lü Yang now carried a murderous intent. Lü Yang, noticing this, displayed an even more aggrieved expression:

“Fellow Daoist Ye, I am also deeply saddened by Brother Ye's death.”

He sighed again, saying, “But with a formidable enemy before us, we must unite and fight together. We can't afford to let minor grievances cause greater losses, can we?”

“Hmph!”

Ye Guyue, not being a fool, knew it was impossible to have internal strife at this critical moment. However, she was unwilling to cooperate with Lü Yang and instead distanced herself from him.

Seeing this, Lü Yang felt even more wronged and couldn't help but sigh, thinking:

‘What a pity, I can't take advantage of the chaos to eliminate a second one...’

—Ye Guyue's suspicion was spot on.

Indeed, it was his doing.

Cheng Xian's full-force strike alone could not have killed Ye Xingfeng. Even if Ye Xingfeng was caught off guard, it wouldn't have been enough to fatally wound him in a single blow.

However, with Lü Yang's involvement, it was a different story.

‘ **【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】** allows me to transform into a sea of Qi, ever-changing and impervious to divine abilities. Moreover, the mist formed from my transformed body can obscure spiritual senses!’

Ye Xingfeng was severely injured by Cheng Xian's strike because his spiritual senses were clouded by the 【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 , making him completely unaware of Cheng Xian's attack. By the time he realized it, it was too late. His divine abilities couldn't be activated in time, leading to his sudden death.

'That's for hunting me down overseas in my previous life!'

Lü Yang withdrew his sorrowful expression, a cold smile forming in his heart as he shifted his gaze away from Ye Guyue's graceful figure. He never rushed his revenge.

There would be ample time in the future!

With this thought, Lü Yang looked again towards Cheng Xian, who appeared calm. After all, to him, it didn't matter who died.

What mattered was that someone had died.

'At least one formidable enemy is gone, making things a bit easier for me...'

Cheng Xian pondered, glancing once more at Lü Yang, then decisively retreated, avoiding direct confrontation, and instead charged towards Yu Shao.

Pick the softest persimmon first!

'This person's divine abilities are bizarre; I can't take him down quickly. I can't retrieve 【Shen Jin】 . Rather than wasting time, it's better to achieve a tangible goal first.'

Cheng Xian's strategy was clear. However, Lü Yang wouldn't give him the chance. With a loud explosion, his figure dispersed, transforming once again into a vast sea of mist. Within this sea, clouds and fog surged, engulfing Cheng Xian and manifesting numerous illusions, each stirring the distractions in Cheng Xian's heart.

“ 【Clarity】 ! 【Purity】 ! 【Awakening】 !”

Standing amidst the sea of mist, Cheng Xian continuously chanted true words, with heavenly light and fierce flames flowing from his lips, burning away all the illusions around him.

If he were still at his peak, he wouldn't mind entangling with Lü Yang.

However, at this moment, his magical power was greatly depleted. If he couldn't secure a quick victory, once his previously suppressed injuries returned, he would perish without needing to be struck again.

Lü Yang noticed this as well.

Therefore, his tactic was simple: drag it out!

‘【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 combined with 【Essence of All Flowers】 may lack direct offensive capabilities, but in terms of confusing the mind and entangling the enemy, it's unparalleled!’

Moreover, as time passed, Lü Yang's mastery of the 【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 deepened. Even though Cheng Xian continuously used true words to burn away the mist formed by divine abilities, the marvel of the 【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 lay in its ability to regenerate from the heart. As long as Cheng Xian couldn't maintain his composure and was swayed by illusions...

Then all his arising thoughts would become nourishment for the 【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 .

No matter how much he burned here, more would emerge there!

The result was that Cheng Xian's magical power was continuously eroded, his mind teetering on the brink, while Lü Yang reaped the benefits without any loss.

‘And I haven't even invoked the power of a Great True Person yet!’

At this moment, he had already gathered four divine abilities. If he were to draw power from the Myriad Spirits Banner and elevate the two illusory divine abilities to their rightful status...

He would immediately reach the late stage of Foundation Establishment!

Although the duration wouldn't be long and there would be backlash afterward, it would still be the combat strength of a Great True Person, enough to secure victory at a critical moment.

The latest novel is first released at 69 Book Bar!

‘No rush, using it now would be a waste.’

Lü Yang was well aware of how deceptive he appeared at the moment. Who would expect a rogue cultivator who hadn't even perfected the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment to suddenly become a Great True Person?

While he remained composed, Cheng Xian was reaching his limit.

‘If this continues, I will die!’

Amidst the layers of mist, Cheng Xian's expression grew solemn, his once flawless body beginning to show cracks—his previously suppressed injuries were returning.

At this moment, the crisis of life and death finally overwhelmed the inexplicable obsession in his heart.

‘Perhaps... I should retreat?’

‘After all, why should I continue fighting? I have a promising future in the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 . Staying here and fighting to the death is not worth it...’

With this thought, Cheng Xian felt a desire to retreat.

But would Lü Yang give him the chance? In fact, this very thought of retreat was something Lü Yang had deliberately induced using the 【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 !

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a flash of golden light exploded within the vast sea of mist, hidden and hard to detect, silently approaching Cheng Xian from behind.

Then came a thunderous explosion. Cheng Xian had no time to turn around. Like Ye Xingfeng before him, by the time he reacted, Lü Yang's blade had already pierced him. The boiling sword Qi, like raging fire, entered his flesh and rapidly spread throughout his body.

【Yuan Tu Treasure Talisman】 !

Being in the Sword Pavilion's camp, Lü Yang naturally couldn't use the techniques of the Saint Sect. He could only bring out all the sword Qi talismans he had previously crafted.

Then, he stuffed them all into Cheng Xian's body in one go.

“No, don't...”

Before Cheng Xian could finish speaking, thousands of sword Qi erupted, instantly turning him into a sieve.

To make matters worse, having suffered another severe injury, Cheng Xian's divine abilities became unstable, and all his previously suppressed injuries returned at this moment.

This resurgence immediately exceeded his capacity to endure.

“Crack!”

With a loud bang, Cheng Xian's body split apart, shattering into countless fragments, which Lü Yang then swept into the Myriad Spirits Banner.

At the same time, he didn't forget to shout:

“Brother Ye, I have avenged you!”

With Cheng Xian's death, the already shaken Human Immortals from the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 became even more terrified.

And at that moment...

“Boom!”

A loud explosion dispersed the clouds and mist.

In the sky, the blue and white hues finally faded, revealing the figure of Daoist Dangmo, Ye Guangji. The 【No Kill】 sword had already returned to its sheath.

His expression remained melancholic, his sighs filled with sorrow.

However, in stark contrast to his demeanor, blood dripped steadily, and in his hand, he held the heads of Celestial Immortal Minghua and three Earth Immortals!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 330 : "He Already Apologized, What More Do You Want?"

[1,022 words]

Chapter 330: "He Already Apologized, What More Do You Want?"

"What on earth is going on in your world?!"

In the hands of Daoist Dangmo, the head of Minghua Celestial Immortal dripped with fresh blood. His expression was filled with terror, and his lips trembled as he muttered, surprisingly still able to speak.

And it wasn't just him.

The other three Earth Immortals could also speak. Though their heads had been severed, they hadn't died; they merely experienced the discomfort of being amputated below the neck.([Reddit][1])

However, precisely because they had been beheaded, a certain "influence" they had previously been under was dispelled, allowing an unprecedented fear to surface in their hearts. Minghua Celestial Immortal couldn't even comprehend his earlier thoughts:

A world with over thirty Fruit Positions! How did he dare to come here?

"Could it be... a Supreme made a move against me?"

This was the only explanation. Thinking of this, Minghua Celestial Immortal couldn't help but twitch the corners of his mouth, swallowing all his emotions, narrowly refraining from cursing aloud.([Philosophy China][2])

—Beast!([HKU Scholars Hub][3])

What kind of beings are Supremes? They hold Fruit Positions, high and mighty, yet they made a move against a mere Celestial Immortal like him. Is there no justice? No law?

And what about his own Supreme?

Why didn't they save him?

"You... what exactly..."

In an instant, countless words surged in Minghua Celestial Immortal's heart, but before he could speak, Daoist Dangmo shook him vigorously, causing his eyes to roll back.

"Quiet."

Daoist Dangmo scolded in a low voice, his expression somewhat troubled. His sword intent was named **【No Killing】**; as the name suggests, his sword doesn't kill.

All those struck by his sword might have their limbs severed or be shattered to pieces, but they wouldn't die. At most, they'd lose all their divine abilities and powers, ending up like Minghua Celestial Immortal and the others—alive but incapable of any further accomplishments.

For some, this was worse than death.

However, in Daoist Dangmo's view, a miserable life is better than a good death. As long as one is alive, there's always hope in life.

The next moment, a light descended.([Dominican University][4])

Daoist Dangmo returned to the ship, his divine sense sweeping over the area. Soon, he frowned as he noticed Ye Xingfeng's absence, causing a sinking feeling in his heart:

"Where's Xingfeng? What's going on?"

"Uncle!"

Seeing Daoist Dangmo finally return, Ye Guyue, who had been suppressing her emotions, immediately flew over. Her delicate face showed a look of resentment.

However, before she could speak, Lü Yang stepped forward and said, "Apologies for disappointing you, Senior. Brother Ye died because of me. I am willing to repay this karma by reincarnating in the Sword Pavilion. Please, Senior, do not blame Senior Sister Ye. All the faults lie with me alone."

Ye Guyue: "..."

Who is your Senior Sister? You haven't even joined the Sword Pavilion yet!

Sword Seed, huh!

"You still want to join the Sword Pavilion?" Ye Guyue gritted her teeth. "Uncle, this person secretly plotted against Xingfeng. Quickly execute him to avenge Xingfeng!"

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang stood with his hands bound, lowering his head. Although he showed a hint of grievance, he remained silent, appearing obedient and ready to accept any punishment.

Daoist Dangmo shook his head upon seeing this.

The next moment, he reached out and made a gesture, as if stirring the heavens and earth. The surrounding scenes began to rewind, revealing previous events.([Scribd][5])

This wasn't time reversal but a re-enactment of past scenes. Only those who had perfected Foundation Establishment or had exceptionally high cultivation could perform such a feat. In essence, it was asking the heavens and earth to show their "records." If one's cultivation wasn't sufficient, the heavens and earth would simply ignore the request.

Soon, numerous scenes appeared.([Eternal Life Wiki][6])

Moments later, Daoist Dangmo's expression gradually darkened. He wasn't a fool and couldn't possibly overlook the subtle actions of Ye Guyue and Ye Xingfeng.

"...Brought this upon themselves!"([Qingdao News][7])

Daoist Dangmo snorted softly, then waved his sleeve, dispersing the scenes. Although his face showed anger, a deeper helplessness flickered in his eyes.

"Clearly, you intended to kill someone..."

"So what?"

Ye Guyue couldn't comprehend. "Uncle, even if that's the case, we didn't actually kill him. Now that Xingfeng is dead, doesn't he bear any responsibility?"

"Moreover, this person managed to use a divine ability to vanish at such a precise moment. Clearly, he intended to use someone else's hand to kill!"

"Just a coincidence."

Daoist Dangmo shook his head, looking at Lü Yang. "He was inside the 【No Existence Heaven】 at the time. I've been there; it blocks all divine sense perception."

Ye Guyue was instantly infuriated.

She even felt a bit resentful towards Daoist Dangmo. No wonder the family head always said their uncle was unconventional. She hadn't expected him to be so pedantic!

At this moment, Lü Yang spoke up, "Senior, it was indeed my fault."

He appeared sorrowful and remorseful. "Although Brother Ye's death was unintentional on my part, I still believe I should bear some responsibility."

After speaking, Lü Yang looked at Ye Guyue, sincerely saying, "Senior Sister, please rest assured. Although Brother Ye has died, his soul may not have dissipated. If he can reincarnate, I will personally guide him into the Sword Pavilion and help him regain his former peak. In this way, it can be considered a part of his destiny."

"...Demonic overlord from Jiangbei, and you dare to talk to me about destiny and karma?"

For a moment, this valiant beauty's delicate face turned crimson, her temperature rising. Her gaze towards Lü Yang was filled with murderous intent.

He was using her own words!

"...I'm sorry."

Lü Yang quickly shrank back, quietly taking a step closer to Daoist Dangmo, lowering his head again, displaying an aggrieved look, ready to accept any punishment.

"Alright."

Seeing this, Daoist Dangmo finally spoke, "Xingfeng brought this upon himself. After he reincarnates, I will find a way to bring him back to the family."

For a True Person, even if the soul is scattered, it doesn't mean true death. As long as it's within this world, the fragmented soul can still be guided by the 【Netherworld】 and reshaped. Although it would result in an entirely new person, if one truly seeks their origin, it still counts as reincarnation.

However, with Daoist Dangmo handling it this way, how could Ye Guyue be content?

"Uncle..."

"No need to say more."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,207 words]

Chapter 331: Did I Forget Something?

“ 【Heaven-Slaying, World-Annihilating】 !”

Just four simple words, yet their implication sent chills down one's spine. Instantly, the Mysterious Immortal Minghua in Daoist Dangmo's hand began to tremble violently.

“Impossible, Supreme One—”

Minghua Immortal still tried to convince himself. After all, the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 still had a Supreme. He had witnessed the Supreme's might firsthand; it was simply unstoppable.

“No—!”

The next moment, a furious and grief-stricken roar echoed from the heavens.

The roar came from the phantom of the Celestial Court above the sky. In the center of the numerous pavilions and towers, atop the Lingxiao Hall, stood a towering figure whose face was indistinct.

The Supreme of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 .

Strictly speaking, in the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , this Supreme's strength was formidable. After all, it was his domain. In one-on-one combat, he feared no True Sovereign.

However, the problem was that no one fought him one-on-one. True Sovereigns attacked from all directions—east, west, south, and north. Several other True Sovereigns watched from the shadows. It was a classic case of the few against the many, like Mount Tai crushing an egg. The Supreme of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 saw no hope of turning the tide!

He couldn't even comprehend.

Why, upon discovering that this world had thirty fruit positions and strength far surpassing the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , did he not flee immediately?

Was he muddle-headed?

Even more absurd, not only did he not flee, but he also attempted to retaliate, sending Minghua Immortal and others, thereby directly exposing the location of his realm.

As a result, just as Minghua Immortal and others arrived, the True Sovereigns, who had long been prepared, followed their path and attacked. The 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , originally far from this world, was forcibly dragged over by the combined efforts of the True Sovereigns!

“A calamity indeed.”

Seeing this, Daoist Dangmo sighed again: “So that's why they ignored my actions.”

He had gone to the mass grave with the intention of stopping all this.

With his sword intent, he could sever the connection between the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 and this world. Yet, he didn't know that the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 had long been a dish prepared by the True Sovereigns.

As a mere Foundation Establishment cultivator, how could he defy the will of the True Sovereigns?

In the end, he achieved nothing and even became a tool used by the True Sovereigns to maintain stability and prevent Minghua Immortal and others from causing widespread destruction.

“...Forget it.”

Daoist Dangmo took a deep breath, quickly dispelling the many distracting thoughts in his mind: “At least I saved a few people; it's not a complete loss.”

With that, he took out a storage pouch.

He opened the pouch.

Standing beside Daoist Dangmo, Lü Yang sneaked a glance. Instantly, his pupils contracted. Inside the pouch, he saw a shocking scene.

—Heads.

Countless heads, densely packed. Though separated from their bodies, they were not dead. They spoke vividly, conversing with each other!

Such a bizarre sight immediately captured Lü Yang's full attention.

It wasn't until the heads of Minghua Immortal and the three Earth Immortals also fell in and were placed on a rack that he snapped back to reality.

Looking up, he met Daoist Dangmo's eyes.

His eyes were full of calm, without a trace of malice.

“Did I startle you?”

Daoist Dangmo gave a bitter smile: “These are all people I have slain. I didn't kill them, but I couldn't let them roam free, so I kept them with me.”

“After all... better a miserable life than a good death.”

‘Hiss!’

Something's not right! This Daoist Dangmo is extremely suspicious! Though he appears to be a good person, something feels off!

Yet, he couldn't pinpoint what was wrong!

Despite this, Lü Yang maintained a calm expression, even showing admiration: “Senior, your compassion is admirable. The Sword Pavilion truly deserves its reputation as the righteous path's leader.”

“Overpraised.”

Daoist Dangmo shook his head and looked up at the sky again.

At the same time, the vast and boundless Celestial Court phantom in the sky became increasingly clear, even gaining a sense of reality.

Below the Celestial Court, one could vaguely see small realms, resembling bubbles. At this moment, they disconnected from the Celestial Court one by one, disappearing without a trace. Finally, the Celestial Court fully solidified, truly appearing in this world!

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a loud noise erupted within the vast Celestial Court, followed by its gradual collapse, eventually splitting into four pieces!

Each piece had a Celestial Gate standing.

The four Celestial Gates, each dragging a quarter of the Celestial Court fragment, fell into the regions of Jiangnan, Jiangbei, Jiangxi, and Jiangdong!

“The 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 ... is finished!”

Seeing this, Daoist Dangmo couldn't help but close his eyes: “With the True Sovereigns' intervention, that realm likely has no living beings left.”

“Another realm destroyed.”

“As for this current state, it's probably the leftovers left by the True Sovereigns for us lesser cultivators to scavenge.”

Before he finished speaking, Daoist Dangmo suddenly frowned, and Lü Yang beside him felt his hair stand on end. He sensed an inexplicable heaviness in his heart, an invisible pressure. Though there were no anomalies, his rich experience led him to a swift judgment:

‘A True Sovereign is watching here!’

Moreover, within the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, Ancestor Ting You seemed to sense something but dared not show himself. Only a deep hatred flickered in his eyes:

“It's him... it's 【Zhengde】 !”

【Cheng Tian Zhengde True Sovereign】 !

Lü Yang focused inwardly, daring not to speak. Fortunately, the True Sovereign's gaze showed no interest in him, not even pausing on him.

The next moment, Daoist Dangmo opened his eyes and looked at him:

“Bring me the 【Shen Jin】 .”

“Understood, Senior.”

Lü Yang immediately took out the 【Shen Jin】 . Daoist Dangmo gently tapped the hilt of his waist sword, 【No Killing】 , releasing a beam of sword light.

Instantly, the sword light entered the 【Shen Jin】 , illuminating it. Lü Yang then saw a red dot hidden within the pure and flawless Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend, blood-like in color. Only when the sword light swept over it did it vanish, and the previously lifeless 【Shen Jin】 regained its vitality.

“...It's done.”

After completing this, Daoist Dangmo returned the 【Shen Jin】 to Lü Yang: “I've removed the mark; you needn't worry about hidden dangers.”

“Thank you, Senior!”

Lü Yang respectfully accepted the 【Shen Jin】 , glanced at it, but couldn't help but think: Could there be another new mark inside?

Hard to say!

‘Truly a hot potato!’

Lü Yang felt a headache. This 【Shen Jin】 energy was something he sought, but he couldn't determine whether others had left traps inside.

‘It's not just the 【Shen Jin】 ; more importantly, it's myself.’

‘Could there be traps left by True Sovereigns on me? If so, even if the 【Shen Jin】 is clean, I can't hand it over to my main body.’

‘In that case... reincarnation is imminent!’

Lü Yang pondered deeply, concluding that only the 【Underworld】 could completely cleanse his soul fragment. After all, reincarnation is equal for everyone.

At this moment, Daoist Dangmo suddenly spoke:

“This time, a fragment of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 's Celestial Court fell into Jiangnan, about to become a new wonder. The True Sovereigns ordered me to lead a team to explore.”

“Fellow Daoist Lü, would you like to join me?”

A fragment of the Mystic Spirit Realm's Celestial Court?

Lü Yang's eyes lit up. Without hesitation, he cupped his hands and said: “Willing to assist, Senior.”

Opportunity had come!

Die in the secret realm, reincarnate, cleanse his identity, join the Sword Pavilion... In an instant, Lü Yang clarified his thoughts and planned his next steps!

However...

‘Did I forget something?’

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,258 words]

Chapter 332: I'm Going to Crush Some Noobs!

" 【Tribulation Wave】 !"

Almost instantly, Lü Yang's main body, far away in the Hidden Sword Villa, brought out the 【Tribulation Wave】 and frantically activated 【Insight】 to cleanse himself.

It was only after a while that he finally let out a breath of relief.

"Fortunately, at least my main body is fine."

But what had just happened?

Why did he suddenly have the inexplicable thought that he had forgotten something? Could it really be PTSD from confronting perceptual obstructions, seeing everyone as a threat?

‘These True Persons are truly shameless! All of them just love crushing noobs.’

Lü Yang took a deep breath and calmed himself. At least he was still alive. That was the biggest evidence that his true body had not been exposed. He must not lose composure.

‘Logically, by using 【Puppet Master】 to control the clone and observing as an outsider, I should be immune to perceptual obstructions. No, that’s too optimistic. Someone like 【Ang Xiao】 —even Suo Huan himself was toyed with to death by him. There’s no guarantee that 【Puppet Master】 is truly safe.’

But in any case, his main body had not been captured.

‘Respond to all changes with no change! As long as my main body is safe, the worst is just some suffering for the clone. There’s still room to maneuver, no need to restart everything.’

With that in mind, Lü Yang once again activated 【Puppet Master】 to look through the clone’s eyes.

At the same time, Daoist Dangmo took out several blank jade slips. He first engraved them with divine sense, then distributed them among those present.

“What’s this...?”

Lü Yang swept his divine sense over it and saw that the jade slip contained a set of cultivation techniques titled 《Scripture of Mystic Spirit Response》. The content looked oddly familiar.

Soon, he realized:

‘This is a Grade-Two True Art!’

It corresponded to a Grade-Two True Art of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 !

Immediately after, Daoist Dangmo explained, “This was derived by the combined efforts of the honored seniors. It’s straightforward and easy to grasp, so everyone should be able to learn it quickly.”

Daoist Dangmo’s tone was calm, even slightly indifferent. “As for this mission in the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , the seniors have reached an agreement. The Heavenly Court will be split into four sectors, with each faction sending members to gather Qi. Mutual interference is allowed, and the final division of the Dao Fruit will be based on the amount of Qi collected.”

Whoever collected the most Qi would get the largest fragment of the Dao Fruit.

So troublesome?

Lü Yang’s mind stirred, but he didn’t speak. Instead, he used 【Puppet Master】 to have True Person Xiu Xin ask, “Why involve us in such a major matter?”

All the True Persons had joined forces—what could possibly stop them?

More importantly, this seemed like a concession to Foundation Establishment cultivators. Given how high and mighty True Persons usually were, how could they possibly share benefits with Foundation Establishment cultivators?

Daoist Dangmo smirked slightly. “It’s not by choice.”

“Although the Supreme of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 was sent into reincarnation by the seniors, a Dao Fruit is still a Dao Fruit. Faced with annihilation, how could it not resist?”

“True Persons could suppress it by force.”

“But if they did, the Dao Fruit of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 would resist with all its might. Even if victory was achieved, the fruit would be utterly shattered.”

“It wouldn’t be worth it.”

“That’s why we need to go in and gather Qi, to slowly nibble away at the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】’s Dao Fruit until it loses all will to resist. Only then can it be divided up.”

If the previous strategy was a gluttonous feast...

Then this one was a slow, savoring bite.

Only this way could profits be maximized—a full meal in one go. As for the scraps, the True Persons didn’t mind tossing them to their Foundation Establishment followers.

“So that means, senior, you’re not going in?”

“I can’t.” Daoist Dangmo shook his head. “Not just me. Late-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators who have started to resonate with the Dao Fruit would also be targeted by the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】.”

“So only early and mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators can enter this time.”

Seriously?

Lü Yang touched his chin. Was he considered a Grand True Person? Probably not, since technically he was still at early-stage Foundation Establishment!

Whether it was 【Law Holding】 or other miraculous abilities, they only counted when used. Divine Void divine powers were even more nebulous, not occupying any true

divine power slot. Who knew how the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 would judge that? If Grand True Persons were targeted for resonating with the Dao Fruit...

What about the Myriad Spirits Banner?

In this lifetime, his claim to the Grand True Person title rested on the mysterious power within the Myriad Spirits Banner, suspected to be a proto-form of 【Heavenless Heaven】 —not a Dao Fruit.

Would the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 accept that?

‘Wait, I’ve already used the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 to cleanse the Myriad Spirits Banner. No cause, no effect. Whether the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 can detect anything is still uncertain!’

‘If it can’t detect...’

Then even inside the Heavenly Court fragment created by the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , he could still pose as a Grand True Person without fear of provoking it!

Lü Yang was instantly overjoyed.

‘Doesn’t this mean I can challenge across levels?’

Even a minute as a Grand True Person would be enough to crush mid- and early-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators—easy as swatting flies, like a tiger among sheep!

‘And if what Daoist Dangmo said is true, then the power of True Persons likely can’t enter the Heavenly Court fragments. Forcing their way in would trigger a violent reaction from the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 ’s Dao Fruit and alert me—unless it’s some uniquely stealthy True Person force...’

This might actually work?

The thought fired Lü Yang’s imagination. If his assumptions were correct, this so-called Heavenly Court fragment was his golden opportunity!

‘Massacre, loot!’

‘Go all out—I’m not planning on living anyway.’

‘When the time comes, dispose of the bodies, then let the manipulated ancestors of the Yun clan and True Person Xiu Xin walk out and announce that the Jade Pavilion won.’

As for the details, since both the Yun clan ancestor and Xiu Xin were his 【Puppet Master】 puppets, he could fabricate any story—claiming he sacrificed his life to turn the tide and perish with the enemy, thereby preserving the honor of the Jade Pavilion. That merit would be enough to enter Jade Pavilion!

A flawless plan!

“Fellow Daoist Yu Shao, we’ll be counting on you this time.”

Following Daoist Dangmo’s gaze, Lü Yang also looked at Yu Shao, who was still pale after being gravely wounded by Cheng Xian’s single strike.

Since they needed to explore the Heavenly Court fragment, what could be better than a guide?

However, Yu Shao only gave a bitter smile. “In the past, I was merely a minor official in the Heavenly Court, without position or power. I may not be of much help to fellow Daoists.”

“Better than nothing.”

At this, Daoist Dangmo solemnly added, “But please act within your limits—safety first.”

At the same time, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes.

‘Originally I just didn’t want to waste, but now there’s unexpected gains.’

With that thought, Lü Yang directed his divine sense into the Myriad Spirits Banner and focused on one spirit being nurtured within—it was none other than the Immortal Yu Chengxian!

Compared to Yu Shao, as a direct disciple of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 Supreme, Chengxian undoubtedly held a far higher status and deeper understanding of the Heavenly Court!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt a surge of anticipation.

‘Indeed, compared to Daoist Dangmo, True Person Chong Guang, Ang Xiao, Feixue—those perfect Foundation Establishment cultivators or even True Persons—they’re not right for me.’

High-level battles were too hard.

I want to crush some noobs!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,351 words]

Chapter 333: "Loyalty Beyond Words!"

Compared to the soul-searching methods of the 【Heavenly Mother's Transformative Mystic Light】 and the 【Mending Heaven True Scripture】 , the transformation of banner spirits by the Myriad Spirits Banner could also achieve a similar effect.

However, the latter had a flaw—it lacked autonomy.

Unless it was someone like Chen Xin'an or Ancestor Ting You, who willingly entered the banner while alive, most banner spirits would only act upon commands.

Therefore, soul-searching through banner spirits could only be conducted by "asking questions."

Yet, this approach easily led to a paradox.

Lü Yang: "Why didn't you tell me about this?"

Banner Spirit: "You didn't ask."

Lü Yang: "How could I ask if I didn't know?"

Banner Spirit: "If you didn't ask, how would I know whether you knew or not?"

And thus, the conversation reached an impasse.

Hence, compared to the Myriad Spirits Banner, Lü Yang preferred to have Chen Xin'an handle such matters. After all, it concerned cultivation, and even if it meant some hardship for him, Lü Yang believed he would understand.

Jiangnan, the Mass Grave.

This was the site where a fragment of the Heavenly Court had fallen. Evidently, it was orchestrated by the True Lord of the Sword Pavilion, who took the opportunity to eliminate a spy planted by the Primordial Saint Sect in Jiangnan.

Witnessing this, Lü Yang felt a tinge of emotion. In previous lifetimes, although the Mass Grave in Jiangnan had changed hands multiple times, it ultimately returned to the control of the Primordial Saint Sect without significant damage. Yet, in this lifetime, due to his influence, this marvel had been uprooted entirely, leaving no trace behind.

'However, the Primordial Saint Sect likely didn't suffer a loss.'

The fact that Minghua Celestial and others sought him out was clearly the work of the Primordial Saint Sect. They were probably the first faction to enter the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 .

In such circumstances, the Primordial Saint Sect must have reaped substantial benefits.

Conversely, the Sword Pavilion suffered considerable losses.

If not, the Primordial Saint Sect wouldn't have stood by while the Sword Pavilion filled the Mass Grave. It seemed both True Lords were engaged in tacit transactions.

"Hmm?"

As they approached the Heavenly Court fragment, Lü Yang noticed someone already waiting there. The leader appeared ordinary, but his brows exuded a sharp aura.

'Chong Guang!?'

Almost simultaneously, Chong Guang noticed Lü Yang's gaze and looked over.

"Hmm?"

This clone of Lü Yang hadn't changed his appearance. After all, he had crafted this face from the beginning, and any alteration would be easily noticeable.

Therefore, Chong Guang recognized him at a glance.

Seeing this, Lü Yang frowned slightly but remained unconcerned. After all, to Chong Guang, he was an undercover agent loyal to the Primordial Saint Sect, and Chong Guang wouldn't expose him.

Even if he did, it didn't matter.

After all, Chong Guang was a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect.

Would anyone believe the words of a True Person from the Primordial Saint Sect?

Thus, even though he noticed Chong Guang's gaze, Lü Yang calmly met it with a demeanor of uprightness, which surprised Chong Guang.

'Interesting. Is he truly an undercover agent?'

Chong Guang pondered internally but showed no expression, naturally shifting his gaze from Lü Yang to Daoist Dangmo:

"Greetings, Daoist Dangmo."

Daoist Dangmo returned the greeting: "Greetings, Daoist Chong Guang."

Despite the polite exchange, a hint of doubt flickered in Daoist Dangmo's eyes. Clearly, he hadn't expected Chong Guang to appear here at this time.

'Shouldn't he be in Jiangbei?'

With the Heavenly Court divided in the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , the Primordial Saint Sect reaped the most benefits, naturally becoming the target of many factions. Various parties had dispatched personnel to compete for the fragments.

In such a scenario, as the acting Sect Master of the Primordial Saint Sect, Chong Guang should have been overseeing Jiangbei. Instead, he traveled all the way to Jiangnan to confront the Sword Pavilion, raising suspicions about his motives. Yet, Chong Guang's disposition was impeccable, his expression as calm as a still lake, revealing no clues.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang also furrowed his brows.

He sensed that among those brought by Chong Guang, one gaze was fixed intently on him, causing discomfort.

'The other party harbors malice.'

Although the individual concealed it well, Lü Yang, having cultivated the 【Sea of Sorrow Infusion】 , was highly sensitive to thoughts and emotions, quickly identifying the source.

'...Hmm?'

Looking around, a familiar figure caught Lü Yang's eye.

Chen Taihe, Master of the Mending Heaven Peak!

Upon seeing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes, a surge of excitement rising within him: 'It's him? Truly a narrow path for enemies... but his arrival is timely!'

In the previous lifetime, his cultivation was still weak, and he didn't dare confront the Master of the Mending Heaven Peak directly. He could only strike during his Heavenly Thunder Tribulation, ultimately killing him. Although this avenged the grudge of being crushed with a single finger, it still felt somewhat unsatisfying. Now was the perfect time to send him to reunite with Chen Xin'an!

With this thought, Lü Yang didn't hold back, righteously declaring:

"What are you staring at, demon?"

His words directly targeted the Master of the Mending Heaven Peak, causing him to pause slightly, evidently not expecting Lü Yang to detect his covert observation.

However, he had his pride.

Since he had been exposed, he didn't bother hiding, stepping forward and moving his lips slightly to transmit a message: "You're cultivating 【Pomegranate Wood】?"

Oh ho? Exposed?

Lü Yang didn't respond but quickly deduced: 'It seems this guy arrived early and observed the remnants of my divine abilities after the battle with Qi He?'

Cultivators who practiced the same fruit position were considered Dao adversaries!

Such conflicts were not apparent in the early Foundation Establishment stage and only slightly intensified in the mid-stage. Most Foundation Establishment True Persons rarely fought over such matters.

But for someone like the Master of the Mending Heaven Peak, who aspired to become a Great True Person, it was a significant issue!

He couldn't ignore it.

Especially upon discovering that Lü Yang's mana and aura were more complete and pure than his own, suggesting that, given time, Lü Yang might surpass him!

How could he tolerate that?

Therefore, he volunteered to stay in Jiangnan and participate in the operation to seize the Heavenly Court fragment from the Sword Pavilion, intending to eliminate Lü Yang amidst the chaos!

"What did that demon say to you?"

At this moment, beside Lü Yang, Ye Guyue suddenly spoke softly: "Don't hide it. I sensed the fluctuation of that demon transmitting a message to you just now."

"Uncle, they must be colluding!"

Daoist Dangmo glanced sideways.

'Deliberate. That old thing from the Mending Heaven Peak did it on purpose!'

Lü Yang cursed internally but maintained a calm expression: "Senior, upon entering the Heavenly Court fragment, I am willing to hand over all my gains, solely seeking to join the Sword Pavilion."

"Don't change the subject!"

Ye Guyue frowned slightly: "I asked you, what did that demon from Jiangbei say to you just now?"

"Senior Sister, you've misunderstood." Lü Yang looked aggrieved: "That demon didn't say anything to me, merely pretending to transmit a message to sow discord."

Ye Guyue naturally didn't believe him.

However, before she could continue questioning, Daoist Dangmo waved his hand: "Enough, Guyue. That's not important. I trust Lü Yang's sincere heart."

Of course, he didn't truly believe.

But the key wasn't whether he believed or not; it was that Lü Yang had demonstrated his attitude: risking entering the Heavenly Court fragment and handing over all his gains afterward.

Wasn't that enough?

With such an attitude, whether he had exchanged messages with the Master of the Mending Heaven Peak was a minor detail. In Daoist Dangmo's eyes, Lü Yang's loyalty was beyond words.

Had Daoist Dangmo ever suspected Lü Yang? Of course. People weren't fools; how could they unconditionally trust a rogue cultivator who voluntarily defected? But as mentioned, Lü Yang had shown his attitude and actions, leaving no room for criticism. So why dwell on it?

"Boom!"

At this moment, a beam of spiritual light shot up from the original Mass Grave location, illuminating the sky and reflecting a majestic and magnificent portal.

Above the portal were three flamboyant characters:

【Southern Heavenly Gate】 !

In an instant, numerous escape lights soared into the sky.

Seeing this, Lü Yang quickly activated his own escape light. However, just as he entered the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , Chong Guang's voice suddenly reached his ears:

"Fellow Daoist, shall we make another deal?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,360 words]

Chapter 334: The Heavenly Gate Opens!

Behind the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 .

Lü Yang stood with his hands behind his back, gazing up at the sky. He saw streaks of flowing light descending toward the layers of palaces before him, each accompanied by a Foundation Establishment True Person.

However, at this moment, he paid them no mind.

Before departing, Chong Guang's sudden voice transmission still echoed in his ears:

'How strange—he actually wants me to stay in the secret realm as long as possible. Why? Though, the payment is indeed generous.'

Lü Yang's consciousness sank into his sea of awareness.

When it came to transactions, Chong Guang was always generous. One job equaled one reward; he never delayed wages. One could say he was a conscientious employer.

The next second, a scripture appeared before Lü Yang's eyes.

『Taiyin Kan Yuan Scripture』 !

'This isn't a Daoist technique, nor a secret art, but a Daoist scripture specifically analyzing the essence of 【Xin Metal】 , meant to enhance the corresponding Dao cultivation!'

'Xin Metal is the foremost among the five metals, the origin of the eight stones. In the heavens, it embodies the essence of the sun and moon, the essence of Taiyin; on earth, it is the mineral of mountains and rocks. These insights are likely Chong Guang's comprehension of 【Xin Metal】 during his time as a Xin Metal spirit, meticulously recorded. For me now, it's truly invaluable!'

Because 【Xin Metal】 was precisely the next stage in his cultivation.

The 【Pomegranate Wood】 fruit position corresponded to 【Geng Metal】 , 【Shen Metal】 , 【Xin Metal】 , and 【You Metal】 —wood residing in the realm of metal, overcoming to acquire, signifying the transformation of wood.

Lü Yang was engrossed in reading.

However, the next moment, his expression suddenly changed: “Why is it cut off!”

But he quickly realized this was Chong Guang's safeguard measure—to prevent him from taking the goods without fulfilling the promise, only half of the scripture was provided.

‘Scoundrel!’

The remaining half was sealed by Chong Guang, and only by staying within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 for the agreed duration would the seal's restriction be lifted.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang composed himself and turned his attention to his surroundings. What met his eyes was a scene of ruins and broken walls.

The vast heavenly palace was devoid of people.

Yet, traces left by living beings were everywhere—scratches from blades and spears on the barriers, footprints, and shattered, scattered tea sets.

Just witnessing this scene, Lü Yang could imagine a once-prosperous heavenly court, with myriad immortals paying homage, entering through the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , discussing Dao in this cloud-bound palace, chatting, drinking tea, playing chess... It should have been an ordinary day, but it all came to an abrupt halt in an instant.

‘The Saint Sect arrived; another celestial realm has fallen.’

The entire heavenly court's immortals were swept away in an instant, even the supreme being of the 【Xuanling Realm】 was slain, leaving only empty palaces.

“True Lords are truly shameless!”

After a moment of reflection, Lü Yang took out the Myriad Spirits Banner. With a shake, Cheng Xian, who had transformed into the banner spirit, emerged, his face full of loyalty.

“What treasures are in this place?”

Lü Yang inquired. Upon hearing this, the banner spirit Cheng Xian pondered briefly and said, “In the area corresponding to the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , the most precious treasure is in the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 .”

“ 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 ?”

“Indeed, that was the supreme being's refining chamber, housing an Eight Trigrams Heavenly Capital Furnace, within which resides a 【Six Ding Divine Fire】 , the number one fire under heaven.”

Speaking of his own assets, Cheng Xian spoke confidently: “Besides that, the palace also contains a 【Immortal Root Coeval with Heaven】 . It's said that carrying it ensures eternal life, free from lifespan worries. Next is the 【Dao-Conforming Immortal Pill】 personally refined by the supreme being in recent years.”

A total of three rare treasures!

“ 【Six Ding Divine Fire】 , excellent for refining tools and pills, and formidable in combat.”

“ 【Immortal Root Coeval with Heaven】 , this is of little use to me; Foundation Establishment True Persons are never concerned about lifespan, but rather the calamity of Bei Feng.”

“Only the last one, the 【Dao-Conforming Immortal Pill】 ...”

Lü Yang's eyes suddenly showed a look of desire. According to Cheng Xian, after consuming this immortal pill, a cultivator's comprehension could be greatly enhanced!

Moreover, the higher the comprehension, the better the effect!

“Such an immortal pill should naturally be mine!”

Despite his words, Lü Yang did not act immediately but planned to scour other places first.

Firstly, to fulfill the agreement with Chong Guang by staying longer in the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 . Secondly, he had the idea of setting a trap.

“Now everyone is scattered within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , dealing with them one by one is inefficient. However, since the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 is the most important place, eventually, everyone will gather there. I'll wait until all are present, then strike in one fell swoop!”

Lü Yang was fully confident in this.

Because just now, he had already tested it.

Even within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , he could still draw upon the mysterious power hidden within the Myriad Spirits Banner, temporarily attaining the status of a Grand True Person!

Wouldn't that be an easy sweep?

Elsewhere within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 .

The Mending Heaven Peak Master appeared cold, holding a Foundation Establishment True Person in his hand. Without any visible action, he instantly drained him into a mess of flesh.

After completing this, a flush appeared on the Mending Heaven Peak Master's face.

As the master of Mending Heaven Peak, his attainments in the 『Mending Heaven True Scripture』 were nearly at their peak, just one step away from reaching the highest realm of the technique.

【Mending Heaven】 !

“Heaven has flaws; I mend them with my body.”

“It's said that upon reaching this realm, one can merge with heaven and earth, extracting and supplementing from them. It becomes a grand ritual attracting the attention of fruit positions!”

It could be said that once achieved, the foundation for seeking gold was established.

“This journey is of great importance.”

“As long as I collect enough external qi and accumulate sufficient merit and fortune, I can seek the next celestial star, with hopes of breaking through to the later stage within a hundred years!”

“As for that Lü Yang...”

Thinking of this, the Mending Heaven Peak Master sneered: “He hides quickly, but as long as he's still within this 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , he won't hide for long!”

Several days later.

Although the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 encompassed only a quarter of the 【Xuanling Realm】's heavenly court, it was still unimaginably vast, equivalent to a continent.

During this time, the Sword Pavilion and the Saint Sect had already clashed several times.

However, mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators like the Mending Heaven Peak Master and Ye Guyue had not taken action, maintaining a relatively delicate balance between the two sides.

Yet, in the central area of the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】.

A majestic palace stood amidst the clouds, terrifying heavenly and earthly spiritual energy surging around it, revealing myriad formation patterns, keeping outsiders at bay.

It was the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】!

Being the most valuable place within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】, some Foundation Establishment cultivators had already discovered it early on, studying the palace's formations, pondering how to break in.

Over time, more and more Foundation Establishment cultivators gathered here.

They had clearly divided into two factions.

One led by Ye Guyue, the other by the Mending Heaven Peak Master. However, at this moment, both were looking around, seemingly searching for someone.

'He's not here... Does he not dare to come?'

Like the Mending Heaven Peak Master, Ye Guyue also intended to deal with Lü Yang within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 and had been searching for his whereabouts during this time.

Yet, Lü Yang seemed to have vanished into thin air, leaving no trace.

'Where is he hiding?'

Ye Guyue's delicate brows furrowed.

However, no one noticed that just outside the area where everyone was gathering at the Heavenly Capital Palace, Lü Yang was calmly drawing formation patterns.

He was setting up an array!

'Are you kidding? According to Cheng Xian, the 【Heavenly Capital Hall】 was the supreme being of the Xuanling Realm's pill refining place. How could a True Lord's residence be without danger?'

'In the end, I don't need to enter the 【Heavenly Capital Hall】 at all.'

'Isn't it better to rob those who come out of the 【Heavenly Capital Hall】 ? Oh no, I'm now part of the righteous path; it should be called eliminating demons and defending the Dao!'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,424 words]

Chapter 335: Seizing the Treasure

Since he had resolved to eliminate demons and uphold the Dao, Lü Yang naturally had to make thorough preparations.

At this moment, he was not merely drawing ordinary formation patterns but was, under Cheng Xian's guidance, restoring the original formations within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 .

"These formations were shattered due to the invasion of various True Persons."

"However, this doesn't imply they were weak; it was purely because the number of True Persons was overwhelming, and they shamelessly ganged up, making the formations appear feeble."

"If I can restore a corner of them and gain control—"

"Even if I can't unleash their peak power, it should be more than sufficient to trap those in the early and mid Foundation Establishment stages!"

While setting up the formation, Lü Yang did not forget to activate the 【String Puppet】 , using the perspectives of the Yun Clan's Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin to observe the situation at the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 .

This also allowed him to adjust his plans according to the circumstances.

"Boom!"

Finally, as several Foundation Establishment True Persons adept in formations broke through the patterns, a burst of fragrance suddenly wafted from the previously sealed 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 .

Just this single waft of fragrance caused several Foundation Establishment True Persons with insufficient cultivation and Dao attainment to show intoxicated expressions. Their faces flushed red, and by the time they regained their senses, they were already too weak to absorb more, forcing them to retreat in embarrassment, unable even to approach the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 !

“What a potent pill fragrance!”

The Mending Heaven Peak Master took a deep breath, feeling his entire magical power increase slightly, and many new insights into his mastered spells and divine abilities emerged spontaneously.

“This is... a pill that aids in comprehending the Dao!”

On the other side, Ye Guyue also discerned the nature of the pill. Her beautiful eyes sparkled: “This palace has a karmic connection with my Sword Pavilion.”

In an instant, the two had already cast Lü Yang's matters aside.

After all, what lay before them was truly a significant event concerning their Dao path; everything else could be set aside. With this in mind, they quickly regained their calm demeanor.

“Cooperate?”

Both were no fools. They knew that a place housing such a precious treasure would undoubtedly be heavily protected. Without cooperation, obtaining the treasure would be as difficult as ascending to the heavens.

As for the conflict between the righteous and the demonic? For the True Persons of the Saint Sect, it was of no consequence. As long as there were sufficient benefits, any conflict could be set aside.

From the Sword Pavilion's perspective, this wasn't cooperation.

It was merely temporarily setting aside the elimination of demons and upholding the Dao to seize opportunities and increase strength. Once their strength had grown, they would be more confident in eliminating demons and upholding the Dao.

Prioritizing tasks accordingly.

Soon, the two stood before the grand gate of the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 . In the next second, they simultaneously extended their hands and pressed them against the palace door before them.

“Boom!”

In an instant, a muffled sound was heard. The Mending Heaven Peak Master and Ye Guyue both frowned, feeling a sudden, immense pressure descend upon them.

“Is this testing our status?”

Ye Guyue's expression changed slightly but quickly returned to calm, as she realized this was merely a test without any substantial lethal effect.

'Strange...'

On the other side, the Mending Heaven Peak Master pondered: 'Ye Guyue is indeed at the mid Foundation Establishment stage, without any deceptive means.'

He was aware of the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 .

After all, the Saint Sect was the first to infiltrate the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 and had already gathered much intelligence beforehand, with the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 being one of the known locations.

That's why he deliberately brought Ye Guyue along—to test the cultivation of this renowned female sword cultivator from the Sword Pavilion. The result was somewhat unexpected. It wasn't that she wasn't strong—Ye Guyue was very strong, at the peak of the mid Foundation Establishment stage, and as a sword cultivator, the Mending Heaven Peak Master wasn't entirely confident he could defeat her.

The problem was, she wasn't strong enough!

'I have cultivated the 《Mending Heaven True Scripture》 , resonating with heaven and earth, with an incredibly keen spiritual sense. I clearly sensed an inexplicable danger here.'

If it wasn't Ye Guyue, then who could it be?

'Forget it... The great Dao lies ahead; one must strive for it. I suppose this 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 was once the residence of a True Person. Some danger is to be expected.'

'At least this place has already been plundered by a True Person. Now, with the world divided into four, it's both to fully claim the fruit of the position and to nurture us lower

cultivators, so there certainly won't be any deadly traps. The remaining challenges can be seen as tests left by the True Person for us!

With this thought, the Mending Heaven Peak Master immediately made up his mind.

After all, life comes only once, and the Dao path only has one route. No one in the world can redo it. If you don't fight when you should, there will be no chance to fight later!

“Swift!”

In the next second, he activated his light escape technique and entered the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】. Ye Guyue followed closely behind, and other mid Foundation Establishment True Persons were not far behind.

The first thing that caught their eyes was the pill furnace located at the center of the palace.

The furnace was divided into eight trigrams, stable and balanced, with only the lid lifted. Inside, a radiant pill resided, emitting the fragrance.

' 【Dao Harmony Immortal Pill】 !'

Through the perspectives of the Yun Clan's Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin, Lü Yang immediately focused on the pill, but soon revealed a strange expression.

That 【Dao Harmony Immortal Pill】 , though residing in the furnace, was not at the center but leaned against the corner, appearing like leftover scraps.

'Could it be that this pill furnace has already been looted?'

Lü Yang could almost imagine a True Person barging into the pill room, lifting the furnace lid, and sweeping away all valuable pills.

Only a single 【Dao Harmony Immortal Pill】 remained, perhaps of little use to a True Person, and thus was left behind.

'It must be so! Otherwise, given the habits of various True Persons, even if something had the slightest utility, they would take everything without leaving a single one.'

Even so, in Lü Yang's view, this was already a considerate act. After all, judging by himself, if it were him, he wouldn't care whether the pills were useful or not—he'd take them all first! Even if he ended up eating them like candy, he wouldn't leave a single one for those who came after.

“Crack...”

At this moment, a crisp sound startled everyone present. Following the sound, they saw a lush spiritual root immortal plant.

'【Everlasting Root Coexisting with Heaven】!'

In an instant, Lü Yang felt a chill in his heart.

The reason was naturally not this spiritual root, reputed to grant immortality, but the headless corpse leaning against it.

The corpse was petite, with an empty neck, yet no blood seeped out. It wore a Dao robe, with a Dao scripture written in gold on the robe, each character a gem. However, the most terrifying aspect was its blood-stained finger, which had written a single stroke on the ground.

'Not good!'

In an instant, the Mending Heaven Peak Master and Ye Guyue felt their bodies sink, and a voice filled with hatred, like an unending river, roared in their ears:

“【Execute】!”

Through the perspectives of the Yun Clan's Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin, Lü Yang clearly saw the changes within the palace and patted his chest with lingering fear.

“Good thing I didn't go!”

That headless corpse was evidently a terrestrial immortal in life, possibly a Dao attendant who stoked the fire for the supreme being of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , cultivating the supreme Dao lineage.

This single character was identical to the 【True Word Technique】 previously used by Cheng Xian.

It even further transformed into the 【Heavenly Constitution True Method】 !

And a terrestrial immortal, comparable to a great True Person, who left behind such a blood character in life, must have infused all his life's magical power and divine abilities into this single character.

“Though it might feel like a gentle breeze to a True Person, not even worth their attention—”

“But for those at the mid Foundation Establishment stage, it's a sure kill!”

“However, since he's dead, it only has the power of a single strike... and it will only target the strongest one or two present. If I had gone, I would have been the target!”

Fortunately, he didn't go.

Otherwise, the unlucky ones would have been Ye Guyue and the Mending Heaven Peak Master!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 336 : The Decline of the Righteous Path, I Must Emerge from Seclusion!

[1,421 words]

Chapter 336: The Decline of the Righteous Path, I Must Emerge from Seclusion!

In an instant, all was silent.

The blood-written character left behind by the Earth Immortal before his death was merely an outpouring of his boundless hatred over the destruction of the Heavenly Realm—a despair so profound, yet so fierce!

The next moment, both the Mending Heaven Peak Master and Ye Guyue froze simultaneously.

Evidently, the two of them were the strongest present, and now this blood-written character sought to execute them, leaving no room for resistance!

Immediately after, an invisible crushing force, like a guillotine, descended from the sky, aiming to sever the heads of Ye Guyue and the Mending Heaven Peak Master, extinguishing the vitality within their physical forms. A final, resentful strike from an Earth Immortal, comparable to a Grand True Person, was not something they could withstand!

"Crack!"

Clear cracks appeared on their foreheads, threatening to tear apart their bodies. Yet, both of them simultaneously emitted an unusual radiance.

On the Mending Heaven Peak Master's side, it was a jade token.

【Imperial Command Jade Token】 !

Within the Primordial Saint Sect, only the four peak masters were qualified to obtain such a rare treasure. The jade token was refined by a True Person and could be activated in life-and-death situations to preserve one's life.

In a previous lifetime, Lü Yang had invoked the Golden Core sword energy of Skeleton Mountain to slay the Mending Heaven Peak Master. Even then, he had relied on this jade token to survive, albeit with a shattered body, engaging in a fierce battle between a mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator and a pseudo-Foundation Establishment opponent. Nonetheless, he had survived.

This alone demonstrated its value.

The power of the Earth Immortal's blood-written character was naturally far inferior to the Golden Core sword energy. Thus, the 【Imperial Command Jade Token】 merely flickered slightly and dispelled it.

However, the Mending Heaven Peak Master showed no joy upon witnessing this.

'To think it was used up just like that!'

This was his life-saving trump card, intended for use during future tribulations. If a formidable enemy attacked during a critical moment, he could have used it for protection.

Yet, it was expended here!

And it was wasted on a dead man's attack!

A complete loss!

Meanwhile, on the other side, Ye Guyue's delicate face turned pale as she staggered back a step. Her condition was far worse than that of the Mending Heaven Peak Master, and she even spat out blood.

The Mending Heaven Peak Master glanced at Ye Guyue, understanding the situation. Both of them had been simultaneously assaulted by the Earth Immortal's blood-written character and were on the verge of death. However, he had the protection of the 【Imperial Command Jade Token】 , while Ye Guyue had none. Consequently, he remained unscathed, whereas Ye Guyue suffered severe injuries.

'This woman owes me her life.'

With this thought, a smile appeared on the Mending Heaven Peak Master's face. "Fellow Daoist, according to the Sword Pavilion's doctrine, you now owe me a karmic debt."

"..."

Ye Guyue said nothing and turned to flee.

She certainly couldn't be bound by a single sentence from the Mending Heaven Peak Master. The concept of karmic debt was something to discuss with others; within the Sword Pavilion, there was a different interpretation.

What truly prompted her to flee decisively was the intense killing intent hidden beneath the Mending Heaven Peak Master's amiable tone. After all, she was now gravely injured by the Earth Immortal's blood-written character, her combat strength reduced by seventy percent. She couldn't possibly contend with the Mending Heaven Peak Master in his prime. If she didn't escape now, she feared she would be drained to death!

"Hmph, trying to escape?"

The Mending Heaven Peak Master laughed loudly upon seeing this. "Everyone, take action and stop her! Today, I shall savor the taste of a Sword Pavilion Fairy!"

In an instant, chaos erupted in the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 !

Brilliant divine abilities lit up, colliding with thunderous force. The surging spiritual energy resembled a tidal wave, wreaking havoc on the various instruments within the palace.

With the opportunity before them, everyone was driven mad.

Only the Yun Family Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin remained clear-headed. Not only did they refrain from joining the battle, but they also protected each other and withdrew from the palace.

"Help me!"

Witnessing this, Ye Guyue, unable to escape under the Mending Heaven Peak Master's suppression, brightened her beautiful eyes and hastily transmitted a message in their direction:

"I am a direct descendant of the Ye Family. Fellow Daoist Xiuxin, you are a guest of the Ye Family and should assist me. Fellow Daoist Yun, your Yun Family is currently in decline. If I escape, I will owe you a karmic debt and ensure your Yun Family produces a Foundation Establishment cultivator in the future. You two have shallow backgrounds; dying for me is also a fortuitous opportunity."

Upon hearing this, the two of them immediately halted.

Ye Guyue's eyes lit up with hope, and she mustered her remaining strength to resist the Mending Heaven Peak Master's divine suppression, awaiting their intervention.

However, the next moment—

"Sigh!"

The Yun Family Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin both turned their heads and sighed, their distinctly different faces displaying identical expressions.

"Fellow Daoist Ye, why make such a pitiful display?"

"This is your destined fate."

The familiar tone, the familiar sigh—even though the voices were different, Ye Guyue still sensed a familiar presence behind this lament.

'It's you... Lü Yang!?'

It was him!

How could it be him?

Even at this moment, Ye Guyue didn't understand how Lü Yang had managed it—why the Yun Family Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin had become puppets under his control.

She only knew that Lü Yang was the mastermind behind all of this!

He was indeed problematic!

Ye Guyue's beautiful eyes widened, her delicate face contorted in fury. This was the only reaction she could muster, yet she didn't even have time to shout Lü Yang's name.

The next moment, the Mending Heaven Peak Master's palm landed on her body. The 《Mending Heaven True Scripture》 activated, instantly draining her into a dried corpse. At his level, the 《Mending Heaven True Scripture》 no longer adhered to formality, and he was also mindful of appearances—he couldn't possibly perform an overt act in public.

With Ye Guyue's fall, the other Sword Pavilion True Persons naturally couldn't resist any longer.

Soon, several streaks of escape light flew out from the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 , fleeing without looking back. Only the Yun Family Ancestor and True Person Xiuxin remained in place.

'The time has come.'

Seeing this, Lü Yang grinned, not intending to eliminate the fleeing individuals, as they would serve as witnesses to Ye Guyue's death at the hands of the Mending Heaven Peak Master.

"The demonic forces are strong; the righteous path is in decline."

Lü Yang sighed, no longer concealing his presence, and openly walked toward the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 . As he passed, arrays of formation light rose around him.

"...But it doesn't matter; I will take action."

Previously, both Ye Guyue and the Mending Heaven Peak Master had grievances with him. Coupled with the Earth Immortal's blood-written character in the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 , he was indeed in danger if he wasn't careful.

But now, things were different.

The Earth Immortal's blood-written character and the Mending Heaven Peak Master's 【Imperial Command Jade Token】 had neutralized each other. Ye Guyue had been killed by the Mending Heaven Peak Master, leaving only a weakened Mending Heaven Peak Master.

Lü Yang felt it was time for him to emerge from seclusion!

Supporting the righteous path couldn't be delayed!

As he pondered, Lü Yang arrived at the entrance of the 【Heavenly Capital Palace】 . At the same time, the Mending Heaven Peak Master had just collected the 【Dao-Integrating Immortal Pill】 from the furnace, the 【Six Ding Divine Fire】 from the furnace's base, and the 【Undying Root of Longevity Equal to Heaven】 from the pill room, hanging the bulging storage pouch at his waist.

Then he saw Lü Yang at the door.

"It's you?"

The Mending Heaven Peak Master looked surprised, then laughed heartily. "Truly, a pillow delivered when one is drowsy. Since you've walked into the trap, I won't be polite."

Lü Yang remained indifferent, merely taking out the Myriad Spirits Banner.

"Fellow Daoist Chen, I've come to reunite you with your son."

The next moment, the banner surged, and Chen Xin'an's figure appeared within, his face filled with sorrow as he let out a mournful cry, "Father!"

"...Xin'an!?"

The Mending Heaven Peak Master was stunned.

At that moment, Lü Yang channeled the mysterious power within the Myriad Spirits Banner, enhanced by the wondrous effect of 【Holding the Law】 , causing four divine lights to burst forth instantly!

"Swish!"

A power completely surpassing the mid-Foundation Establishment level descended from the sky, instantly suppressing all of the Mending Heaven Peak Master's thoughts, until a single finger pressed against his forehead.

"Splurt!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,248 words]

Chapter 337: I Remembered

At the brink of death, the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak barely regained some semblance of thought. What surged forth, however, was an indescribable fury:

'Late Foundation Establishment? Great True Person?'

'How could it be a Great True Person!'

After all, the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak was a seasoned True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect. In a flash, he discerned Lü Yang's tactics—merely a feint.

On the surface, he called out Chen Xin'an, using the father-son relationship to unsettle his mindset and expose a flaw. Although the Peak Master didn't care about a mere son, he did value someone who could help him divert tribulations. Especially upon

discovering that Chen Xin'an had already reached Foundation Establishment, he still fell for the trap.

Once he showed a weakness, Lü Yang seized the opportunity to launch a sneak attack.

A very reasonable tactic.

But the problem was: you are a Great True Person! A late Foundation Establishment cultivator bullying a mid Foundation Establishment one—utterly overkill—yet you still resort to such underhanded tricks?

'Beast. Sword Seed.'

For a moment, countless words surfaced in the Peak Master's mind to describe Lü Yang's actions, but when it came to expressing them, he found himself at a loss.

Speechless!

The Peak Master maintained an extremely twisted and complex expression, as if encompassing all the vicissitudes of the world, and then—boom!—he exploded!

Lü Yang calmly retracted his finger.

At that moment, he felt a sense of mental clarity. The grudge from his fifth lifetime, where he was killed by the Peak Master with a single finger, had finally been avenged.

'Thus, the shame of the past is finally washed away!'

Oh right, there's also Arhat Fulong.

Suddenly, old and new grudges surged in Lü Yang's heart: letting him die of old age before was too lenient, causing Lü Yang to lose so much lifespan in vain.

Just you wait!

Though his mind was filled with distractions, Lü Yang's actions remained swift. The All-Spirits Banner unfurled in the air, absorbing the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak and transforming him into a banner spirit.

'Perfect. The Peak Master's mastery of the "Mending Heaven True Scripture" far surpasses mine, and is leagues ahead of Chen Xin'an. Previously, when harvesting from a mid Foundation Establishment cultivator, Chen Xin'an was already struggling. In the future, attempting to harvest from a late Foundation Establishment Great True Person would be beyond his capabilities.'

'At that time, the Peak Master can take over!'

While planning the Peak Master's future, Lü Yang shifted his gaze around, only to see numerous escape lights already scattering in all directions.

"Worthy of being the Holy Sect!" Lü Yang laughed heartily.

The moment the Peak Master was killed by his finger, these True Persons of the Holy Sect had already begun fleeing. Under normal circumstances, he wouldn't be able to stop them all.

"Fortunately, I was prepared!"

Around the Heavenly Capital Palace, formations lit up, sealing the heavens and earth, forcibly blocking all escape routes, leaving them with nowhere to run!

No one understands the True Persons of the Holy Sect better than another True Person of the Holy Sect.

Lü Yang had anticipated their reactions and went to great lengths to ensure a complete capture, leaving them no chance to turn the tables.

In the next moment, Lü Yang dispersed his dharma body.

"Sea of Sorrow Infusion"!

Billowing smoke instantly filled the Heavenly Capital Palace, enveloping all the True Persons of the Holy Sect, causing five beams of spiritual light to vanish into ashes.

No suspense at all.

A late Foundation Establishment Great True Person dealing with a group of early Foundation Establishment cultivators, spanning two realms, and even employing divine powers—utterly overwhelming.

'However, this matter is unlikely to be concealed from the Holy Sect.'

Lü Yang's expression remained calm. Daoist Dangmo had the ability to retrospectively view past events, so he harbored no illusions that no one would discover his actions.

But so what?

'I never intended for this avatar to survive!'

'I used forbidden techniques to impersonate a Great True Person, annihilated the Holy Sect in one fell swoop, and avenged the fallen True Persons of the Sword Pavilion. No matter how you look at it, it's justified.'

'Just in time to let this soul fragment reincarnate.'

'Use the "Underworld" to cleanse any potential scrutiny from True Lords. From then on, I'll have a clean slate. Rejoining the Sword Pavilion, who can question my background?'

Perfect!

Thinking this, Lü Yang quickly turned pale. His aura, which had just reached late Foundation Establishment, plummeted instantly. He then knelt and spat out a mouthful of blood.

All part of the act. After all, the borrowed power of the All-Spirits Banner had reached its limit, conveniently causing some backlash. Thus, the loss of magical power, spitting blood, and declining aura—all were genuine. Not even a True Lord could detect any flaws.

"Cough, cough, cough."

While coughing, Lü Yang retrieved the Peak Master's storage pouch. Upon opening it, the three rare treasures of the Heavenly Capital Palace were prominently displayed.

'Not bad at all.'

Satisfied, Lü Yang then took out the "Dao Harmony Immortal Pill" and, without hesitation, tossed it into the All-Spirits Banner: "Ancestor, please refine this immortal pill."

For a moment, Ancestor Ting You was stunned: "Me?"

Lü Yang nodded, appearing indifferent. It was a simple calculation. Such a pill that enhanced comprehension—if he consumed it, he would certainly improve.

But could he surpass Ancestor Ting You?

Highly unlikely.

On the contrary, if he gave this pill to Ancestor Ting You, then, by extension, wouldn't his own astonishing wisdom evolve further?

The choice wasn't difficult.

However, on the surface, Lü Yang still displayed a sincere expression: "Ancestor, you've helped me greatly. How could I, Lü Yang, be someone who doesn't understand gratitude?"

"You."

Upon hearing this, Ancestor Ting You was visibly moved and sighed: "Very well, since the junior is sincere, I shall accept it with humility. In the future, I can assist you even more."

Just waiting for you to say that!

Lü Yang grinned, watching Ancestor Ting You consume the "Dao Harmony Immortal Pill," and only then did he nod in satisfaction.

'Of the remaining two rare treasures, "Six Ding Divine Fire" and "Immortal Root of Longevity Equal to Heaven," I'll take one to cultivate the second-grade true skill "Resonant Mysterious Spirit Scripture" that Daoist Dangmo passed to me before entering the Southern Heavenly Gate. Having an additional second-grade true skill adds more depth.'

'The last one must be handed over.'

'After all, I can't let the Sword Pavilion walk away empty-handed. I need to present something to them, as I'm counting on this merit to officially join the Sword Pavilion.'

After careful consideration, Lü Yang took the "Six Ding Divine Fire."

The "Immortal Root of Longevity Equal to Heaven" merely extended lifespan, which he deemed useless. Best to leave it for the Sword Pavilion.

He then summoned Ancestor Yun and True Person Xiuxin, handing them the storage pouch. However, at that moment, he froze.

Looking at Ancestor Yun and True Person Xiuxin, the previous doubts resurfaced in Lü Yang's mind.

'I seem to have forgotten something?'

But what was it?

Gradually, Lü Yang's movements stiffened, his expression solidified, and a cold sweat slowly trickled down his forehead, dripping onto the ground.

He remembered.

"Puppet Strings." I have more than two "Puppet Strings"! Ancestor Yun, True Person Xiuxin... damn it, where did True Person Xiao Hai go!?'

But why did I suddenly remember?

In the next second, beside Lü Yang, a slightly puzzled voice naturally sounded, as if it had been accompanying him all along.

"Fellow Daoist, how did you manage to impersonate a Great True Person here?"

"Can you tell me?"

Lü Yang stiffly turned his neck and looked back, only to see True Person Xiao Hai squatting beside him, smiling gently, his eyes reflecting Lü Yang's figure:

"I'm very curious."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,410 words]

Chapter 338: Third Encounter with Ang Xiao

Lü Yang admitted that he did panic for a moment.

However, in the next second, he regained his composure. As he often reminded himself, as long as his true form hadn't been captured, any suffering was merely endured by his avatar.

"【Tribulation Wave】!"

That said, Lü Yang still used the mystical power of 【洞明】 to scan himself several times. After taking a few deep breaths, he turned his gaze to Daoist Xiao Hai.

"It's actually quite simple."

With a calm expression and steady heartbeat, Lü Yang spoke casually, "I have some acquaintance with Mu Changsheng. It's not surprising that he would lend me his divine abilities."

"Really?"

Daoist Xiao Hai—or rather, the one wearing his skin, 【Ang Xiao】—smiled slightly, almost voicing his disbelief. Clearly, he was skeptical.

"That 【Void Heaven】 is indeed interesting, but that's all. The True Lords won't allow Mu Changsheng to ascend with it. In fact, anyone can ascend—except him. His path was doomed from the start. So why would you associate with him?"

【Ang Xiao】's eyes were filled with scrutiny.

He had long been curious about this fellow cultivator who not only uncovered his identity and schemes but also engaged in a remote confrontation with him, slightly gaining the upper hand.

On the other hand, Lü Yang remained silent.

'I'm not a True Lord; I don't know many secrets. The more I say, the more mistakes I might make. Better to stay silent and act mysterious!'

"Won't you answer, fellow cultivator?"

Seeing Lü Yang's silence, 【Ang Xiao】 maintained a composed demeanor and smiled, "Or perhaps you're afraid to answer?"

Lü Yang smiled without speaking.

"Previously, I thought you were an incumbent True Lord. Now it seems I may have overestimated you. Are you a reincarnated True Lord, like that Hong Yun?"

"Speaking of which, there's something else I'm curious about."

【Ang Xiao】 wasn't in a hurry. He slowly stood up, his eyes reflecting Lü Yang's figure, "I've been observing your battles for some time."

"From your fight with that Cheng Xian Immortal, to your killing spree within this 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , you've used 【Sea of Sorrow】 , 【Essence of All Flowers】 , 【Master of Arms】 , 【Stubborn Gold Duke】 , two Void divine abilities, and two innate divine abilities. Yet, in the end, you only feigned being a Great True Person."

"That's quite interesting."

At this point, 【Ang Xiao】 narrowed his eyes, as if spotting a prime prey:

"Earlier, I thought you were hiding your innate divine ability. After all, having two or three divine abilities at the mid-Foundation Establishment stage isn't unusual."

"But now, something doesn't add up."

"If you had one more innate divine ability, combined with the four I mentioned, you'd have five divine abilities in total. That should place you at the peak of the Foundation Establishment stage."

"So, what's your cultivation level?"

"Where is your innate divine ability?"

"As far as I know, no sect in the world delays cultivating their innate divine ability. The only exception is those born and nurtured by nature."

At this, 【Ang Xiao】 suddenly paused, a predatory smile appearing on his face:

"Could it be that you're an Immortal Spirit?"

Lü Yang continued to smile silently.

Even though 【Ang Xiao】 had exposed part of his secret, he remained unflustered, realizing that 【Ang Xiao】 was only attacking him verbally.

'As a True Lord, where are your methods?'

'Even if you don't search my soul, shouldn't you at least restrain me?'

Recalling the oppressive aura 【Ang Xiao】 had in his previous life—something he couldn't resist—he noted that the current 【Ang Xiao】 was different.

'Strange, yes, but not strong enough. What level is Daoist Xiao Hai? Just an early Foundation Establishment cultivator. How can he bear the might of a True Lord? In my past life, 【Ang Xiao】 was terrifying because he used Chong Guang Dao's sin as a vessel. This time, he's just a flashy but useless figure.'

All show and no substance!

Otherwise, why would he waste so many words? He could have just reached into my dantian, seized the Myriad Spirits Banner, and refined it instantly. Wouldn't that be more straightforward?

Why didn't he do that?

Is it because he doesn't want to?

'No, it's because he can't!'

With this realization, Lü Yang became even more composed. After a moment's thought, he decided to drop a bombshell: "You came to find me, but you've fallen into someone else's trap."

Chong Guang's scheme!

'No good person in the Primordial Saint Sect—Uncle Chong Guang, pfft, old thief Chong Guang! Telling me to stay a bit longer in the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 was clearly setting me up!'

Lü Yang was certain that Chong Guang had used some method to predict that 【Ang Xiao】 would follow him. That's why he deliberately made a deal with him, instructing him to linger in the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , using him as bait. Now that 【Ang Xiao】 had taken the bait, Chong Guang had likely already begun his actions.

However, to Lü Yang's surprise,

After hearing his revelation, 【Ang Xiao】 didn't show any shock. Instead, he smiled, "Fallen into someone else's trap? Are you referring to Xue Feihong?"

"Speaking of which, I haven't settled that matter with you."

"You informed Xue Feihong of my identity, causing me considerable trouble. We have no enmity, yet you've made things difficult for me."

Lü Yang continued to smile silently.

Seeing this, 【Ang Xiao】 sighed, realizing that Lü Yang had seen through his bluff. He indeed lacked formidable means at the moment.

'This body... is still too weak.'

A mere early Foundation Establishment cultivator—it's already challenging to conceal it with the Obscuration of Knowledge. Any more, and the physical body might collapse.

Strictly speaking, he's not even Lü Yang's match now.

Otherwise, why waste time talking? He could have captured him first and interrogated him slowly. It's truly a case of willing but unable.

With this in mind, 【Ang Xiao】 stopped beating around the bush.

"Let's make a deal. If I'm not mistaken, you're aiming to use this body to attain the 【Pomegranate Wood】 and break through to the late Golden Core stage, right? I can assist you."

'He's mistaken.'

Lü Yang understood that in 【Ang Xiao】 's eyes, he was undoubtedly a True Lord. But if he were already a True Lord, why seek other fruits?

There's only one answer: late Golden Core stage!

Only those at the late Golden Core stage need the support of other fruits. So, in 【Ang Xiao】's eyes, he had become a scheming True Lord aiming for the late stage.

'Makes sense.'

With this thought, Lü Yang finally spoke, "How do you plan to assist me?"

Seeing Lü Yang break his silence, 【Ang Xiao】 smiled, "Besides the 【Pomegranate Wood】, you've also joined the Sword Pavilion. I guess you're eyeing the 【Sword Edge Gold】 too?"

"But that's too slow and risky."

【Ang Xiao】 spoke softly, "Both early and mid-Golden Core stages involve mastering one element. However, to break through to the late stage, one must master two elements."

"Because mastering three elements creates a cycle. If only two are mastered, it leads to mutual generation and restraint, causing conflict and eventually the collapse of the cave heaven. But that's just an inferior method. The superior approach is to master all five elements, aiming for perfection."

"But achieving five fruits alone is extremely difficult."

"Not only are there many variables, but it also easily attracts hostility from other True Lords. Across the world, there are fewer than five True Lords at the late Golden Core stage."

"And their methods are mostly peaceful."

"They don't monopolize the fruits but cooperate with other True Lords. For example, Xue Feihong—if I'm not mistaken, she used a similar method."

"After all, she's at the mid-Golden Core stage, and her cave heaven remains intact. If an early Golden Core True Lord collaborates with her, attaching their cave heaven to hers, they can also achieve the 'unfallen' effect. Even after a thousand years, upon reaching the end of their lifespan, they can quickly return and ascend again under her guidance."

"However, how can multiple collaborations compare to sole authority?"

At this point, 【Ang Xiao】 displayed a proud expression, "I don't need to master all five fruits. I just need to ensure that no one else can attain the other fruits!"

"Reversing the 【Earth of the Stars】 is my method."

"In this way, without needing to attain the fruits, I can easily complete the five-element cycle, without worrying about partners' betrayal. This is the true path!"

With that, he looked at Lü Yang, "What do you think?"

"If you're interested, I can share my method of monopolizing the five fruits through reversal, as long as you're willing to agree to one simple condition."

Lü Yang pondered for a moment, "...What condition?"

At this, a deep killing intent finally appeared in 【Ang Xiao】's eyes, "I wish to lure Xue Feihong into the 【Netherworld】 and kill her to eliminate future troubles!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,260 words]

Chapter 339: Someone Seeks Gold!?

In an instant, Lü Yang's main body, far away in Jiangnan, almost held his breath.

All the previous events flashed through his mind, allowing him to instantly grasp the key: 'A trap! This is a trap within a trap, and 【Ang Xiao】 is also deliberately setting a trap!'

Indeed, Chong Guang was scheming.

Using himself as bait, he lured 【Ang Xiao】 to follow him into the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , clearly with ulterior motives. However, 【Ang Xiao】 was not one to be underestimated.

At least from 【Ang Xiao】's reaction, it was evident that he sensed something was amiss and even counter-laid a trap. Regardless of what plans Chong Guang and Qing Chen Feixue True Lord had, they were likely to end up walking into 【Ang Xiao】's real trap. At that time, both of them might find themselves in a deadly situation!

'These people are too cunning!'

Compared to them, Lü Yang felt he was practically harmless. Indeed, at his core, he was still a good person, unchanged in the slightest.

'But... something's not right!'

Suddenly, Lü Yang realized: 'Why is 【Ang Xiao】 telling me so much? Isn't he afraid I'll betray him and inform Chong Guang?'

Or perhaps... 【telling me】 this is part of the plan?

If I truly believe him and go to warn Chong Guang and the others, it might actually lead them into 【Ang Xiao】 's real trap?

What level am I on? And what level is he on?

For a moment, Lü Yang's thoughts were in turmoil, until he finally said in a deep voice, "So? Fellow Daoist, how do you want me to assist you? How can I help?"

"It's just a small favor."

【Ang Xiao】 smiled slightly and said, "If I'm not mistaken, Xue Feihong will definitely go to the fragment of the cave heaven I left at the bottom of the water in Gantang Dao."

"At that time, I will open the gates of the Underworld there."

"I only need you to make a move then and help me push Xue Feihong into the 【Underworld】 . The rest, I will handle."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang fell silent.

【Ang Xiao】 's plan was quite good, and the benefits he offered were indeed tempting—a method to reverse 【Chen Earth】 , leading directly to the late Golden Core stage's supreme Dao secret.

Only one problem:

'I am not a True Lord! I don't even have a True Lord-level technique. How can I help him?'

'No... this is also a test!'

'He's testing my strength! If I agree, all is well. But if I don't, he'll see through my true capabilities!'

Lü Yang hesitated for just a moment.

However, that moment of hesitation was enough for 【Ang Xiao】 to confirm his suspicions. A composed smile appeared on his face:

“Interesting, it seems little friend still lacks sufficient strength.”

From "Fellow Daoist" to "little friend."

Lü Yang took a deep breath and stopped thinking.

Undoubtedly, he couldn't outplay these old foxes at the moment.

Since that was the case, Lü Yang's expression became calm: “That may be so, but it seems, senior, you're not that formidable either?”

As his words fell, a deep fragrance wafted around.

‘【Essence of All Flowers】’!

Facing the pressure from 【Ang Xiao】 , Lü Yang no longer tried to guess his thoughts and motives but focused on his own goals.

‘After all, I never planned to survive.’

‘My original plan was to let the split soul reincarnate, then wait for the Sword Pavilion to guide me... It's fortunate that 【Ang Xiao】 appeared early!’

If 【Ang Xiao】 had appeared during his suicide reincarnation, he would have had no power to resist. The split soul might not have even entered the Underworld before being captured and refined by 【Ang Xiao】 . From this perspective, 【Ang Xiao】 was clearly not omniscient.

At least he didn't know about my suicide plan!

‘Might as well... have a fight!’

‘If 【Ang Xiao】 can crush me, then I'll abandon all plans and directly destroy this split soul. If not, then I have a great opportunity!’

After all, he just wanted to reincarnate.

Although 【Ang Xiao】 resided in the Underworld, he couldn't possibly interfere with reincarnation. Otherwise, he would have already controlled the 【Underworld】 and wouldn't need to hide.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang once again connected with the mysterious power within the Myriad Spirits Banner. In his sea of consciousness, four divine lights shone brightly, pushing his status back to the Great True Person level! Then, without hesitation, he struck towards 【Ang Xiao】 , intending to kill him with one blow.

As soon as he acted, Lü Yang went all out!

Since he was going to reincarnate anyway, Lü Yang didn't care about backlash. He directly endured the injuries and once again feigned the Great True Person status, aiming to decide the outcome in one move.

“...Little friend is in a hurry.”

Seeing this, 【Ang Xiao】 still wore a composed smile. He immediately stood up and retreated. With this retreat, his figure instantly vanished.

Lü Yang's movements suddenly paused: ‘Who was I trying to hit?’

However, in the next second, he suddenly regained clarity because he found that his 【Puppet on Strings】 was still linked to another person's vision.

Who was this?

Lü Yang couldn't recall, but that didn't stop him from using this "stranger's" vision to hurl his divine power!

“Boom!”

With a loud bang, an invisible barrier shattered, and the just-vanished 【Ang Xiao】 reappeared, his smile slightly fading.

On the other side, Lü Yang also recalled his recent thoughts and exhaled deeply with lingering fear: ‘Fortunately, after discovering that 【Ang Xiao】 had possessed Daoist Xiao Hai, I kept the 【Puppet on Strings】 active. Otherwise, he would have hidden again!’

【Ang Xiao】's concealment had conditions.

Previously, he hadn't noticed because he didn't use 【Puppet on Strings】 to control Daoist Xiao Hai from the start, causing him to forget about this person.

However, since 【Ang Xiao】 appeared, he hadn't turned off the 【Puppet on Strings】.

Although under 【Ang Xiao】's possession, he couldn't control Daoist Xiao Hai through the 【Puppet on Strings】, he wouldn't ignore the other's existence.

Moreover, this confrontation proved Lü Yang's speculation.

“It seems, fellow Daoist, your strength is also insufficient now.”

Lü Yang's dharma body exploded, turning into a sky full of smoke and sea, trying to sense 【Ang Xiao】's emotions, but all he felt was a deep lake-like calmness.

【Ang Xiao】 stood with his hands folded.

In the next second, he smiled.

“Thank you, little friend, for your help.”

Before his words fell, countless cracks appeared on his body. Lü Yang's previous Great True Person-level strike had hit him squarely.

Or rather, he had no intention of dodging.

Immediately, 【Ang Xiao】 closed his eyes and exploded. A soul quietly floated out and instantly entered an indescribable place.

Daoist Xiao Hai was dead.

The soul reincarnated, and the Underworld opened!

Along with it, 【Ang Xiao】's consciousness attached to him also departed!

In an instant, Lü Yang finally understood the thoughts of this late Golden Core stage Great True Lord: ‘I was wrong... this guy wasn't appearing with ease.’

‘He was bluffing before!’

‘He was indeed schemed against by Chong Guang and Qing Chen Feixue True Lord. A consciousness was trapped inside the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , completely unaware of the present world!’

【Ang Xiao】's situation was extremely special.

His main body was in the Underworld, with very limited perception of the present world. The most direct example was when Chong Guang sought gold; his reaction was extremely slow.

He didn't sense anything until Chong Guang was about to succeed in impacting the 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 .

Therefore, when the body he possessed, Daoist Xiao Hai, was trapped inside the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 and couldn't leave, he was essentially blind to the present world!

During this time, what happened outside?

Jiangnan, Hidden Sword Villa.

Lü Yang's immortal spirit main body opened his eyes and looked towards the sky, seeing a magnificent golden light rising in the north of Jiangnan.

Wherever it passed, it was as brilliant as lanterns.

【Overturning Lamp Fire】 !

Someone was seeking gold!

Who!?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,585 words]

Chapter 340: "It Was All for Ang Xiao!"

"This entire arrangement was made for 【Ang Xiao】 !"

At this moment, Lü Yang's thoughts had never been clearer. As numerous clues connected together, he finally understood the full story up to now.

"The origin... was the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 !"

"In order to devour the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , the True Sovereign of the Sacred Sect took the lead, followed by other True Sovereigns. Many of them went beyond the heavens and destroyed the Mystic Spirit Realm."

Only one person had not been invited.

And that was 【Ang Xiao】 !

"Being in the Netherworld, 【Ang Xiao】 naturally couldn't go with the True Sovereigns to the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 , and thus had no way of knowing what they did beyond the heavens."

"If my guess is correct, the True Sovereigns didn't merely kill the Supreme Beings of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 . Most likely, True Sovereign Qingcheng Feixue took the

opportunity to reveal 【Ang Xiao】's identity! That led to the later division of the Heavenly Court into four fragments—these fragments were bait meant to lure 【Ang Xiao】!"

"And, as expected—"

"【Ang Xiao】 fell for it. He voluntarily entered the Heavenly Court fragments. The consciousness he had originally used to observe the current world was thus sealed, severing his perception of reality!"

"And then—"

At this thought, Lü Yang looked again toward Jiangbei. He understood the arrangement made by Chong Guang to seek the Metal element. But the timing was too early for Chong Guang.

In other words—

"It was Hong Yun!"

To be able to openly seek Metal in Jiangbei like that, he must have had the tacit approval of Chong Guang and Qingcheng Feixue. This completely exceeded 【Ang Xiao】's expectations!

"This matter must be considered on three levels."

"The first layer is the trap set by Chong Guang and Qingcheng Feixue using the Heavenly Court fragments. This might not have been completely unforeseen by 【Ang Xiao】."

"Therefore, the second layer is the trap 【Ang Xiao】 laid on top of that."

"And this trap is most likely within that fragment of the cave heaven beneath the waters of Gantang Dao. If Chong Guang and Qingcheng Feixue thought they had trapped 【Ang Xiao】's consciousness and swaggered into that cave heaven fragment, they would surely fall into the trap—if not die, at least be severely wounded!"

"Beyond that is the third layer."

At this point, Lü Yang couldn't help clapping his hands with laughter:

"Not only did Chong Guang and Qingcheng Feixue not go to that cave heaven fragment, they even pulled the rug out from under him and directly allowed Hong Yun to seek Metal!"

Now that was a killing blow!

Because doing so brought no benefit to Chong Guang, yet it dealt a devastating blow to 【Ang Xiao】 —a truly spiteful move that harmed others with no gain.

"However, 【Ang Xiao】 must have realized something was wrong."

"Because he discovered he couldn't leave the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 and sensed the existence of a trap, he was desperate to contact his main body outside."

"And so, he appeared before me."

With the wondrous blessing of 【Clarity of Insight】 , Lü Yang's thoughts became even sharper:

"His words just now, part probing, part suggesting cooperation—but ultimately, his real goal was only one: to have me kill him!"

"Whether it was to anger me or to incite rebellion within me, those were just tactics. What he wanted was the result—to use me to complete his suicide!"

The influence of the 【Netherworld】 was omnipresent.

As long as one remained within this world, the soul would inevitably enter the 【Netherworld】 after death. This was the key for 【Ang Xiao】's consciousness to return.

"He probably couldn't commit suicide on his own."

That was Lü Yang's guess.

Otherwise, why would 【Ang Xiao】 go to such trouble to have him do it? Wouldn't it be easier to just cut his own throat? There had to be interference from a True Sovereign!

At this thought, Lü Yang manipulated his avatar inside the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 to tentatively extend a hand.

"Ugh!"

His movement suddenly halted—he couldn't proceed any further. Just now, he had intended to self-detonate, but that action had been forbidden.

".As expected!"

Raising his head, Lü Yang seemed to see an invisible force like a great net enveloping the entire 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , revealing a line of talismanic script:

【Suicide is forbidden in this place!】

"This is... the power of the 【Mystic Spirit Realm】 's fruit position! A True Sovereign had influenced it, leaving behind this rule within the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 !"

Thus, the act of suicide to return to the Netherworld was completely blocked for 【Ang Xiao】 !

This was definitely not the work of Qingcheng Feixue.

More importantly, this rule was deeply hidden—at least on the outside, 【Ang Xiao】 hadn't noticed anything. Otherwise, he would have sensed the irregularity.

And this layer of concealment was an entirely different method.

In addition, the seal that isolated the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 from the outside world didn't seem to be Qingcheng Feixue's doing either—it was clearly someone else's work.

"Three... at least three True Sovereigns intervened here!"

"The whole world is the enemy. Truly, the whole world is the enemy. 【Ang Xiao】 wasn't being schemed against by Qingcheng Feixue alone—he was being schemed against by all the True Sovereigns!"

In an instant, Lü Yang couldn't help but feel deep emotion:

"Those who can become True Sovereigns—every single one of them—is no simple figure. Even someone like 【Ang Xiao】 could get overturned if he wasn't careful!"

Hong Yun had no shackles from the 【Earth of the Constellations】 . If he succeeded in seeking Metal and regained control of the 【Overturning Lantern Flame】 , he would undoubtedly destroy all of 【Ang Xiao】 's arrangements, causing him to fall from the late-stage Golden Core Realm. This was a deathless, irreconcilable grudge on the Dao path! 【Ang Xiao】 would stop it at all costs.

Could Hong Yun succeed?

"Highly unlikely."

Lü Yang shook his head—not because he didn't have faith in Hong Yun, but because he had faith in 【Ang Xiao】. This late-stage Golden Core True Sovereign was of exceptional caliber.

Yet it couldn't be denied—

After all these calculations against him, Hong Yun had already seized the initiative. If seeking Metal had once been hopeless, now he had at least a thirty percent chance!

"...Only one question remains."

What about Chong Guang?

This whole arrangement against 【Ang Xiao】 clearly involved massive effort from Qingcheng Feixue and Chong Guang, but in the end, Hong Yun gained the most.

What did they get in return?

Jiangnan, Gantang Dao, Changyao Radiant Cave Heaven.

While Hong Yun sought Metal and True Sovereigns across the world watched, a man with an ordinary face but a piercing aura arrived calmly.

Radiance overflowed from his body.

These many rays of brilliance merged into a pure light of divine power on him, like a bright yellow lamp illuminating the lakebed and revealing the cave heaven.

"It seems this is the place."

The man smiled slightly and walked into the cave heaven without hesitation.

Inside the cave heaven, a massive serpent formed of 【Si Fire】 stretched its body. At the serpent's head, the temple's gate was wide open, revealing the interior.

The scene inside the temple was extremely simple: a chess table, two meditation cushions.

A blurry figure already sat on the inner cushion. Seeing this, the man didn't pause and calmly sat on the outer cushion.

"My lord, Chong Guang pays his respects."

Chong Guang's expression was calm as he looked across the chessboard. There sat a figure shrouded entirely in mist.

"Impressive."

Mist roiled, and a voice that sounded neither male nor female, old nor young, emerged with a tone of admiration:

"The Sacred Sect indeed produces many talents."

Originally, 【Ang Xiao】 had been lying in ambush in the cave heaven, waiting for Chong Guang and Qingcheng Feixue to walk into his trap. But then his avatar in the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 had warned him.

Only then had he realized the changes in the outside world.

Undeniably, he was now in a difficult position. He still had ways to stop Hong Yun from seeking Metal—but it would cost him dearly.

At this, 【Ang Xiao】 had the same question as Lü Yang:

"After all this effort to ruin my arrangement, only to benefit Hong Yun in the end... what exactly do you want?"

"Only to seek the Dao."

Chong Guang's expression was steady: "The 【Overturning Lantern Flame】 can no longer be verified. You are, after all, a late-stage Golden Core True Sovereign. If you truly wish to turn the tide, there are still ways."

"But clearly, your sights are set higher—you are unwilling to pay the price."

"Everything depends on your choice. If you can help me find another path to verify the Golden position, I will naturally help you resolve this predicament."

Hearing this, 【Ang Xiao】 was silent for a moment before understanding:

"Haha, hahaha! So that's it! So that's it! This wasn't your scheme—this was Xue Feihong's! You've already been cast aside!"

True Sovereign Qingcheng Feixue only wanted a True Sovereign of the 【Overturning Lantern Flame】—she didn't care who it was!

That person could be Chong Guang or Hong Yun.

She hadn't approved of Hong Yun before because he hadn't returned in five thousand years—she'd never counted on him, which was why she had placed her hopes on Chong Guang.

But now, things were different.

Hong Yun had traded with Lü Yang for the "True Explanation of the Inner Observation of the Void" and the "Golden Lamp and Jade Radiance of the Upper Firmament," regaining the foundation needed to reclaim his position.

More importantly, he had no hidden danger from the 【Earth of the Constellations】 .

"Compared to you, Hong Yun's chances of seeking Metal are undoubtedly greater. No wonder Xue Feihong sees you as expendable. No wonder you came to me alone!"

Chong Guang cupped his hands: "Your insight is sharp, my lord."

Faced with 【Ang Xiao】's thinly veiled mockery, his expression remained steady, the sharpness in his gaze undiminished—still as resolute as a blade.

"It's nothing more than relying on myself."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,262 words]

Chapter 341: Chong Guang's Scheme

As Chong Guang's words fell, the aura around him suddenly shifted.

Originally, he had perfected his divine abilities, acquiring 【Immortal Spring】 , 【Yin Dragon Water】 , 【Fear of Felling】 , and 【Sturdy Flame Furnace】 , all pointing towards the position of 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 .

However, now, his divine abilities had changed.

The divine light symbolizing 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 abruptly vanished, like a candle extinguished by the wind, replaced by layers of hazy divine illusions.

“ 【Essence of All Flowers】 , 【Sea of Sorrow】 , 【Crossing the Bewildering Ford】 , 【Song of Eternal Regret】 !”

The four supreme divine abilities surprised even 【Ang Xiao】 : “Each one is top-tier. Aren't you afraid that Mu Changsheng might directly possess you?”

“That depends on you, my lord.” Chong Guang replied with a calm smile.

“Hahaha!”

【Ang Xiao】 couldn't help but clap and laugh.

Chong Guang's choice was exquisite!

Because 【Wu You Tian】 , like 【Ang Xiao】 himself, was also shunned by all the True Lords of the world, not allowing Mu Changsheng to truly succeed through this void.

In such a situation, no one would help him. Moreover, going against 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 , even the previously most supportive Qing Chen Feixue True Lord couldn't possibly assist him. Only someone like 【Ang Xiao】 , who was also opposed to the world's True Lords, had both the motive and the capability to act.

After all, the enemy of my enemy is my friend.

At this moment, Chong Guang sought out 【Wu You Tian】 , and not a single True Lord would intervene, because compared to him, 【Ang Xiao】 was undoubtedly more important.

'He's using me as a shield.'

Thinking of this, 【Ang Xiao】 wasn't angry. Instead, he chuckled lightly: “I do have a way to help you resist Mu Changsheng's attempt to possess your consciousness.”

Mu Changsheng was indeed astonishing.

However, in 【Ang Xiao】 's eyes, he wasn't someone beyond comprehension. Over the years, how many outstanding talents had he seen?

All have passed!

'Only by ascending to the position and becoming a True Lord can one truly stand firm in this world. The last one was Feixue; this person is almost identical to her.'

'Could he be the next?'

【Ang Xiao】 pondered in his heart, but his expression remained unchanged. He still smiled faintly: “I can assist you. But young friend, what can you offer me in return?”

“What you lack, my lord, is nothing but time.”

Chong Guang directly pointed out the dilemma 【Ang Xiao】 was facing. He wasn't actually afraid of Hong Yun seeking the golden fruit. The problem was that just before Hong Yun's attempt, a part of his consciousness had been sealed within the 【Southern

Heavenly Gate】 , losing his observation of the present world and missing the best opportunity to intervene.

By the time he realized it, it was too late.

Hong Yun had already passed the initial stage and began to attract the attention of the fruit position. Reaching this point left no time for him to plan and scheme.

This was also the calculation of Qing Chen Feixue True Lord.

But conversely—

“As long as I can help you, my lord, to make up for this lost time, I believe you won't need anyone else's help to break the deadlock.”

As his words fell, Chong Guang revealed his bargaining chip.

A radiant light surged from his entire body, and immediately, 【Ang Xiao】 sensed the source of this light: “ 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 . Corresponding ritual?”

“I take the meaning of 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 , calling it 【Reversal】 .”

Chong Guang said solemnly: “Hong Yun is deeply entangled in your scheme, my lord. I help him break free from a certain death situation. This is the greatest 【Reversal】 , enough to attract the attention of the fruit position!”

If Lü Yang were here, he would surely realize.

That transaction!

Before entering the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , Chong Guang had proactively proposed a deal to Lü Yang, asking him to stay within the gate to lure 【Ang Xiao】 .

Undoubtedly, this transaction allowed Chong Guang to truly participate in the scheme against 【Ang Xiao】 , even serving as a weight. Without this transaction, if Lü Yang had rushed through, 【Ang Xiao】 might have noticed something amiss earlier, triggering a chain reaction.

This was the true purpose of Chong Guang's deal with Lü Yang!

On one hand, it was to lure 【Ang Xiao】 into the game. On the other hand, it was to add a bargaining chip for himself, demonstrating sufficient value.

“This alone isn't enough to cause Hong Yun's failure in seeking the golden fruit.”

“But with this, I am confident in competing with Hong Yun for the attention of the fruit position, delaying him for at least half an hour, which should be enough time for you to act, my lord?”

Chong Guang was enveloped in radiant light, his emotions unreadable.

Another key point of his bargaining chip was that to maintain the ritual, he must not die. If he died, no one could continue to restrain Hong Yun.

The implication: you'd better not play any tricks.

【Ang Xiao】 scrutinized Chong Guang, also unreadable, and after a moment, suddenly said: “. Just keeping you alive, I have many methods.”

Upon hearing this, Chong Guang nodded: “You can take a gamble, my lord.”

Gamble? What a joke!

Once Hong Yun sought the golden fruit, 【Ang Xiao】's thousands of years of planning would be in vain, and his realm would fall. This concerned his path; how could he possibly gamble?

“. Impressive.”

Looking at Chong Guang, 【Ang Xiao】 finally smiled and nodded slightly: “In all these years, you're the first to dare threaten me. Truly courageous.”

“There is no irreconcilable conflict between us, my lord.”

Chong Guang lowered his eyelids: “If you help me, my lord, and I succeed, I can also assist you. This is a win-win situation. It all depends on your choice, my lord.”

During their conversation, Hong Yun's attempt to seek the golden fruit continued. Time was limited, and 【Ang Xiao】 finally set aside his probing thoughts, taking out a candle lamp from his sleeve, lighting it with his magic power. The dim flame illuminated the surroundings, bringing a calming and clear aura.

“This treasure is called 【Sun-Shielding Golden Lamp】 .”

“As the name suggests, it is the fruit position treasure of 【Great Forest Wood】 . Before the flame burns out, it can temporarily borrow the wonder of 【Sun-Shielding】 to help you hide your consciousness.”

“In this way, Mu Changsheng will be unable to possess you temporarily.”

“However, I can only protect you for a while, not for a lifetime. By the time the flame burns out, I should have dealt with Hong Yun's issue.”

“By then, I won't mind taking over another 【Wu You Tian】 .”

Chong Guang immediately bowed: “Thank you, my lord!”

As a veteran True Person of the Holy Sect, Chong Guang was well aware that for 【Ang Xiao】 to say such words already showed immense sincerity.

For a True Person of the Holy Sect, what is the most trustworthy transaction?

It's not the credit of both parties, but whether each gets what they need and whether there is profit. In this regard, both had undoubtedly grasped it precisely.

The Dragon Lord of the previous life clearly failed to grasp it.

Although that was also because the Dragon Lord didn't understand 【Ang Xiao】 's true goal, leading to a misjudgment, Chong Guang obviously wouldn't make this mistake.

In fact, in this aspect, he was even more seasoned than the Dragon Lord.

Because 【Ang Xiao】 's current need was actually created by Chong Guang. Without him, Hong Yun might not have so smoothly ascended to seek the golden fruit.

Therefore, 【Ang Xiao】 referred to it as “threatening”!

To threaten a late-stage Golden Core True Lord with a Foundation Establishment body, despite the circumstances, seizing the opportunity was also a kind of ability.

In the next moment, Chong Guang closed his eyes.

A radiant light blossomed from his body, soaring into the sky, attracting the attention of 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 , while his consciousness had already entered 【Wu You Tian】 !

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,421 words]

Chapter 342: One Person's Persistence

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

Golden light surged from the ground, illuminating intricate and densely packed arcane patterns. These patterns converged toward the center, gathering upon a solitary figure.

He was draped in a crane cloak, a smile playing at the corners of his mouth, gently fanning himself with a feather fan. His demeanor was elegant and unrestrained.

Simply standing there, he seemed to monopolize all the blessings, wealth, and even fortune between heaven and earth, involuntarily inciting feelings of resentment in others.

Daoist Hong Yun!

This reincarnated True Person had finally begun to reveal traces of his former brilliance. A nostalgic expression surfaced in his gaze as he looked toward the sky above.

"How long has it been?"

—Five thousand years!

For a full five thousand years, he had not witnessed the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】. Clearly a reincarnated True Person, yet it was as if he had been forsaken by his position, reaching the pinnacle of wretchedness.

At this thought, he couldn't help but gnash his teeth: 'Ang Xiao!'

At this moment, Hong Yun's hatred for 【Ang Xiao】 was as boundless as the surging river, impossible to cleanse.

After all, ever since reclaiming the 『True Explanation of Observing Heaven and Earth Within the Void』 and 『Upper Radiant Golden Chalice Jade Light』, he had begun to recall the memories that had been stripped away in the past.

Both cultivation methods were intact because Hong Yun had embedded hidden mechanisms within them, ensuring that only he could utilize them and preventing any external tampering. Without such precautions, he wouldn't have dared to boldly seek the Golden Core relying solely on these two methods.

'Still, I mustn't be careless.'

Hong Yun remained vigilant, fully aware of the significant impact his pursuit of the Golden Core would have on 【Ang Xiao】. It was conceivable that Ang Xiao would stop at nothing to thwart him.

Just then—

"Rumble!"

In the Jiangnan region's Gantang Dao, within a fragment of a cave heaven, as Chong Guang activated the magical instrument on his body, Hong Yun immediately sensed a shift in the gaze of the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 .

"Hmm? It's Chong Guang."

Upon noticing this, Daoist Hong Yun's brow furrowed. Although it hadn't reached the point of failure, Chong Guang's interference had introduced unexpected variables.

With this realization, he promptly looked toward a nearby spot.

There stood Qingcheng Feixue True Person, adorned in a noblewoman's attire, poised and graceful. She remained utterly unmoved by Chong Guang's appearance.

"Fellow Daoist... why do you act thus?"

Hong Yun couldn't help but inquire. After all, she had clearly abandoned Chong Guang and placed her bet on him. Why then did she allow Chong Guang to make such moves?

To his surprise, Qingcheng Feixue True Person didn't bother to explain. Instead, she cast him a disdainful glance before calmly stating, "Rather than questioning me, perhaps you should consider how to swiftly reclaim the spotlight of your position. Ultimately, one must rely on oneself!"

"I seek a fellow Daoist who is truly useful."

"Not someone incompetent!"

The implication was clear: she had permitted Chong Guang's actions!

Indeed, Qingcheng Feixue True Person had treated Chong Guang as a discarded piece. However, she hadn't stopped him from seeking another path, even tacitly approving it!

At this moment, Daoist Hong Yun could only take a deep breath, swallowing his words:

'This concerns the Dao path, whether I can reach the late stage of the Golden Core. A single misstep could lead to total failure. Such a crucial matter... and she's still clinging to meaningless persistence!'

'This... madwoman!'

Why was Qingcheng Feixue True Person referred to as a madwoman by True Persons across the world?

Was it merely because she enjoyed dueling? Or because she was somewhat neurotic? Don't be ridiculous. The Sacred Sect was filled with talented individuals; such traits wouldn't even register there.

The real reason was: she had principles!

She firmly believed that "one must rely on oneself," and she upheld this belief from Qi Refining to Foundation Establishment, and even to the Golden Core, unwavering from start to finish.

What kind of world was this?

Either you devour others, or you're devoured. In such a world, those who achieved the status of True Person were either devoid of bottom lines or lacked principles altogether.

Yet Qingcheng Feixue True Person was different.

She actually had principles!

For the sake of these principles, for her inner persistence, she could even set aside her Dao path. To Hong Yun, this was utterly incomprehensible.

If this wasn't madness, what was?

'Forget it.'

Hong Yun took a deep breath, quickly regaining his composure: 'This place has long been under the watchful eyes of various True Persons. It's not a significant issue; the advantage still lies with me!'

However, at that moment—

"Crack!"

Accompanied by a crisp explosion, a vast expanse of purple qi suddenly appeared in the northern sky, overwhelming everything as it surged toward Hong Yun!

【Netherworld Palace】 , an indescribable place.

This was a palace situated within the cycle of reincarnation. The palace itself was constructed from an exceptionally rare material known as 【Kunshan Jade Fragment】 , a spiritual material of the metal element.

It belonged to the category of 【White Wax Gold】 .

Constructed from this material, the palace absorbed the light of the sun and moon, condensed the qi of yin and yang, possessed a pure form and essence, and embodied the true color of metal, harboring the wondrous ability to nurture life.

Within the palace flowed a long river, its beginning and end unseen, stretching infinitely.

This was the 【Long Flowing Water】 .

Looking around, the river surged, its waves forming a secluded area where dragons and serpents coiled, supporting the entire palace.

This was the 【Sand Within Earth】 .

Upon entering the palace, one could see a golden lamp, its flame flickering dimly, illuminating the hall and revealing a figure entirely shrouded in mist.

【Overturning Lamp Flame】 !

Four distinct forces of position intertwined in this domain: fire generated earth, earth generated metal, metal generated water, water generated wood... ultimately coalescing into an unimaginable curtain, forcibly concealing the entire operation of the Netherworld Palace, carving out a modest territory from the realm of reincarnation.

【Great Forest Wood】 !

"What a pity."

Inside the palace, 【Ang Xiao】 stood with his hands behind his back, the mist around him never dissipating. In his hand, he manipulated a lifelike puppet.

"Back then, it was merely a precaution, so I deliberately left behind this 【World-Reporting External Body】 . I never expected it would actually come in handy one day. It shows how many heroes exist in the world... In hindsight, I was too hasty back then; the trump cards I prepared were still insufficient."

Undeniably, he was currently trapped in the 【Netherworld Palace】 .

However, this was because he sought to ascend to the position of Dao Master, thus binding himself. It didn't mean he was entirely incapable of leaving or devoid of any means.

"With it, it's enough to make a trip for me."

His true body couldn't leave.

But with his support, the 【World-Reporting External Body】 could exert power far beyond the mid-stage of the Golden Core, more than sufficient to stop Hong Yun.

"That said, it's ultimately not my true body taking action. With the world's True Persons blocking the way, I'll need time to gradually suppress them and find an opportunity to stop Hong Yun. If it weren't for Chong Guang buying me time, Hong Yun might have indeed escaped unscathed..."

Unfortunately, the 【World-Reporting External Body】 could only be used once.

Once it ventured into the present world and engaged in a great battle, even the obstruction of the knowledge-obscuring barrier couldn't conceal its aura. Upon returning to the 【Netherworld Palace】 , it would inevitably be crushed into dust by reincarnation.

"...Forget it, let's make the trip!"

"Rumble!"

Purple qi filled the sky, eventually transforming into a colossal eye that obscured the heavens, gazing down upon the world, finally locking onto Hong Yun.

Although 【Ang Xiao】 's gaze was focused on Hong Yun, even the residual effects caused cultivators across the world to feel immense pressure.

Even Lü Yang, who was at the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 , was no exception.

"Indeed...!"

Lü Yang looked up at the sky, not surprised by 【Ang Xiao】 's intervention. In fact, this was precisely why he had anticipated Hong Yun's failure in seeking the Golden Core.

Although he was unaware of the existence of the 【World-Reporting External Body】 , he knew that in his previous life, 【Ang Xiao】 had intervened when Chong Guang sought the Golden Core, single-handedly contending with multiple True Persons, resulting in a stalemate. If he could act in the previous life, there was no reason he couldn't in this one.

'My opportunity... has arrived!'

In the next moment, Lü Yang's eyes gleamed. Undoubtedly, all the world's True Persons were now focused solely on Hong Yun's pursuit of the Golden Core.

No one would pay attention to him anymore.

'Seize this chance to reincarnate and deliver 【Shen Jin】 to my true body!'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 343 : Talent and Effort, Shen Metal Acquired!

[1,325 words]

Chapter 343: Talent and Effort, Shen Metal Acquired!

It was quite absurd when one thought about it.

From beginning to end, Lü Yang merely sought a piece of \[Shen Metal], yet because of this, he had been entangled in the schemes of countless True Persons.

“In my previous life, it was the same when I sought \[Yin Wood].”

He had inexplicably fallen into Ang Xiao's knowledge barrier, and like a fool, he and Suo Huan had been manipulated. Just recalling it now brought a wave of bitter tears.

At this point, he couldn't even be bothered to curse anymore.

Fortunately, the hardships had finally come to an end. With the great battle among the True Persons imminent, no one had the time to concern themselves with him. If he didn't make his escape now, then when?

With a thought, Lü Yang immediately summoned True Person Xiu Xin, then took out the \[Shen Metal], preparing to have her deliver it to the Hidden Sword Villa. There, his main body would act, killing and seizing the treasure. Using the \[Tribulation Wave] to kill without cause or consequence would be sufficient to prevent anyone from deducing the cause and effect.

“Of course, this isn't foolproof.”

“But Ang Xiao and True Person Qingcheng Feixue have more pressing matters at hand. Even if they notice something amiss, they won't have the time to come after me.”

This period would be enough for him to hide once more.

As for the avatar, it could simply reincarnate.

Though undeniably risky, this was the safest method Lü Yang could conceive. There was no other choice.

He couldn't possibly give up the \[Shen Metal].

“If even with this, a True Person still manages to find me, then I’ll admit their prowess. They can have my life, and I’ll just restart with the \[Book of a Hundred Lifetimes].”

However, at that moment—

“Wait... don't rush.”

A voice emerged from the All-Spirits Banner, causing Lü Yang's movements to halt abruptly. He quickly opened the banner and looked towards Ancestor Ting You, who had just awakened from meditation.

“Ancestor!”

Lü Yang's face lit up with joy. “You've already finished refining the medicinal power?”

“More or less.”

Ancestor Ting You stroked his chin. “How should I put it? The medicinal power didn't enhance me as much as I expected, but it had some effect.”

He then glanced at the \[Shen Metal] in Lü Yang's hand and said solemnly, “I previously deduced that taking this Shen Metal out would introduce too many variables and make it easy to track. Even if no one is paying attention to you now, they might still trace it back to you later.”

“This...”

Lü Yang's expression darkened. With Ancestor Ting You saying this, his confidence in his original plan plummeted.

“I understand.”

He wasn't a greedy person. Earlier, he thought there was hope, so he wanted to take a gamble. But if there was truly no hope, he wouldn't act recklessly.

Hesitation in decision-making leads to chaos!

“I’ll give up the \[Shen Metal]...”

Before Lü Yang could finish speaking, Ancestor Ting You interrupted him again. “Don't be hasty. While your method has issues, I can assist you.”

Lü Yang's eyes lit up. “...Really!?”

“Yes, I was just deducing this for you.”

Ancestor Ting You remained calm. “First, having someone else retrieve the \[Shen Metal] introduces too many flaws and unpredictable variables. It's definitely unfeasible.”

“The only viable method is to have your avatar deliver it directly to your main body.”

“This process must go unnoticed by anyone. Then, your avatar should commit suicide and reincarnate, using the power of reincarnation to erase all traces.”

“Hmm...”

Lü Yang wasn't foolish. Hearing this much, he realized, “Ancestor, are you suggesting using the Dharma Body for remote transmission?”

\[Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body]!

This Dharma Body was both a spiritual treasure and a divine ability. As a divine ability, it could switch between the main body and the avatar.

However, Lü Yang quickly frowned. “Even so, if the \[Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body] fuses with the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend, it can't be extracted again. So even if it's brought back, I won't be able to use it to refine divine abilities or break through realms.”

“That's simple.”

At this point, Ancestor Ting You finally smiled. “My suggestion is to hide the \[Shen Metal] in the All-Spirits Banner and take it along with the Dharma Body!”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang instantly understood.

“Hide the \[Shen Metal] in the All-Spirits Banner, which is integrated with the Dharma Body. The Dharma Body carries it, and the All-Spirits Banner follows. Naturally, the \[Shen Metal] is taken along!”

Even better, the \[Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body] had been cleansed by the \[Book of a Hundred Lifetimes], leaving no cause or effect. With the \[Shen Metal] wrapped in this layer, it was isolated from external causality. No one could deduce anything. After disposing of the avatar, there would be no evidence left!

The only issue was the All-Spirits Banner.

“This treasure can only store banner spirits and inanimate objects. The Heavenly Gang Earth Fiend has a high status and generally can't be stored...” Lü Yang looked at Ancestor Ting You.

Ancestor Ting You nodded confidently.

“...It's feasible!”

At that moment, Lü Yang was immensely grateful for his earlier decision to feed the \[Dao-Conforming Immortal Pill] to Ancestor Ting You. See? The reward had come!

Without hesitation, Lü Yang began organizing his spoils. Except for the \[Undying Root Sharing Heaven's Longevity], which he kept to report back, he divided the rest into a 70-30 split.

Seventy percent for himself, thirty percent for the Sword Pavilion.

Jiangnan, Hidden Sword Villa.

“Swish swish!”

In an instant, before Lü Yang's main body, the \[Qiantian All-Encompassing Dharma Body] appeared. Without a word, he infused his divine sense into the All-Spirits Banner.

The next moment, Lü Yang's eyes were nearly blinded by a dazzling array of lights. Before him were the long-desired Shen Metal aura, the \[Six Ding Divine Fire] used by the Supreme Alchemist in the \[Heavenly Capital Palace], and various spiritual materials from the \[Southern Heavenly Gate].

Clink clank, piled up in half of the All-Spirits Banner.

For a moment, myriad colors and countless divine lights made Lü Yang swallow hard several times before he calmed down, suppressing the excitement in his heart.

“Mine... all mine!”

Lü Yang was well aware of the significance of this matter.

With Ancestor Ting You's help, the All-Spirits Banner served as a transportation channel. From now on, he no longer had to worry about his avatar's gains being unable to be transferred to his main body!

“I've come this far solely due to the diligent effort of my talent!”

Without any hesitation, Lü Yang directly took out the \[Tribulation Wave], activated its divine power, and began slashing at the \[Shen Metal], focusing on severing causality.

Only after thoroughly severing its causality did Lü Yang use the \[Insight] divine power to examine it.

“There really are no other marks...”

Lü Yang was somewhat surprised. Although Daoist Dangmo had helped him cleanse it once, he always suspected that Daoist Dangmo had secretly left a mark afterward.

Now, it seemed, perhaps not?

Lü Yang still trusted the divine power of the [Tribulation Wave]. If even it couldn't detect anything, he would accept it. Thus, he didn't hesitate further.

Grabbing it, he instantly refined it!

“Phew...”

In an instant, Lü Yang felt his Immortal Spirit Body finally break through the bottleneck. Without needing the [Law-Holding] divine power, a second divine ability brilliance emerged!

Mid Foundation Establishment Realm, achieved!

If he added the [Law-Holding] divine power, that would be three divine abilities, reaching the peak of the Mid Foundation Establishment Realm! If, on this basis, he added two more Void Divine Abilities...

“Divine Ability Perfection!”

Lü Yang was shocked by his own speculation. However, as he began to practice, the result left him helpless, though not unexpected.

Foundation Establishment Perfection was different.

“Perfect Dao Foundation, refining the metal attribute, creating a blessed land. My method of patching together divine abilities is a hodgepodge, impossible to fake.”

“Forcing it would only result in self-destruction!”

As Lü Yang pondered, suddenly—

“Hmm?”

Lü Yang's brows furrowed. He noticed his two Void Divine Abilities, [Essence of All Flowers] and [Sea of Sorrow], suddenly trembling for some reason!

“This is... a change in [No Heaven]?”

“Who did this?”

Lü Yang abruptly looked up.

Although he had no evidence, he had an inexplicable intuition: "...Chong Guang?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 344 : All Beings Compete for Freedom Under the Frosty Sky!

[1,520 words]

Chapter 344: All Beings Compete for Freedom Under the Frosty Sky!

In the realm of 【No Heaven】 , above the layers of cloud seas.

Chong Guang stood amidst the clouds, somewhat surprised, for this time, he had not assumed the identity of the Innate True Person but had appeared in his original form.

"Greetings, fellow Daoist."

Responding to the voice, he looked over to see the clouds rising and falling, revealing an elderly man with white hair and a wrinkled face, who was smiling at him: "You are the first to reach this place, fellow Daoist."

Chong Guang did not reply but continued to observe his surroundings. Then, in a deep voice, he said, "I had thought that this final tribulation would be a scene from your past pursuit of gold. Was I mistaken, or do you, as before, wish to have a chat with me before we formally begin?"

"Both, perhaps."

The Innate True Person smiled slightly. With a wave of his sleeve, the cloud vapor transformed into a tea pavilion. He took a seat first, and Chong Guang followed, sitting opposite him.

"Fellow Daoist, you have endured four tribulations. Could you share your feelings?"

The Innate True Person's tone was calm and composed: "I have faced numerous tribulations in my life. How do they appear to you, fellow Daoist?"

Chong Guang frowned slightly at these words.

But soon, he relaxed his expression and said frankly, "It has indeed not been easy for you, fellow Daoist."

"The first four tribulations: 【Essence of All Flowers】 was your tribulation during Qi Refining. At that time, you were too young to suppress your desires, and being plotted against was inevitable."

"【Sea of Sorrow】 was your tribulation during the early Foundation Establishment stage. With your path seeming hopeless, despair arose. That you could overcome it and regain your Dao heart was truly not simple."

"【Crossing the Lost Ferry】 occurred when you sought 'Empty Verification', searching everywhere for other methods but to no avail. As a rogue cultivator without orthodox inheritance from a major sect, the resulting confusion stemmed from innate differences in foundation. You cannot be blamed; it can only be said that you were born lacking a certain destiny."

"As for 【Song of Everlasting Regret】 , it was your anger upon realizing the truth."

At this point, Chong Guang summarized:

"Looking at your life, fellow Daoist, you have always been under the rule of True Lords, calculated against since Qi Refining, leaving no path to survival. To be honest, reaching today is already a stroke of luck."

Upon hearing this, the Innate True Person laughed heartily: "A stroke of luck... a stroke of luck, hahaha!"

"What you said is very true!"

"If not for luck, how could I have reached the peak of Foundation Establishment? If not for luck, how could I have found that seed of the world and evolved 【No Heaven】 ?"

"It was all luck!"

The next moment, the Innate True Person's laughter abruptly ceased: "But even someone as fortunate as I am cannot become a True Lord. Do you think that's reasonable, fellow Daoist?"

"I know what the outside world says. Many True Lords have come to test me in 【No Heaven】 , thinking I want to seize the bodies of cultivators entering 【No Heaven】 , having them undergo tribulations on my behalf. In the end, the one who completes the five tribulations would be the 'Innate True Person', not themselves."

At this point, the Innate True Person sneered coldly:

“But unfortunately, in this world, those True Lords are all selfish and self-serving. I have clearly told them, yet they refuse to consider it.”

“Hmm?”

Upon hearing this, Chong Guang narrowed his eyes, recalling previous conversations with the Innate True Person. Then, a light suddenly appeared in his eyes:

“Because you have no soul?”

The Innate True Person laughed upon hearing this and nodded: “Exactly!”

At this moment, he existed only as a consciousness within 【No Heaven】. The true soul of Mu Changsheng had long since reincarnated; he had mentioned this before.

To everyone who entered 【No Heaven】, he would say the same.

Yet no one noticed, no one discovered.

“Achieving the True Lord position requires the golden nature, which is refined from the soul! I don't even have a soul; what can I use to seek gold? How can I ascend?”

He had placed the answer right on the surface.

Yet no one noticed.

Or perhaps they noticed but didn't believe it. After all, if not for seeking gold or ascending, why would the Innate True Person go to such lengths?

Chong Guang's expression gradually became solemn: “So... what exactly are you seeking, fellow Daoist?”

“For a 'Restart'.”

The Innate True Person spoke calmly: “This 'Restart' is not for myself to restart, but for my reincarnated self to restart.”

Chong Guang raised an eyebrow: “Your soul has reincarnated; it has already restarted.”

The Innate True Person shook his head: “There are still the lords in the heavens, the gaze of the True Lords. Everything is illusory; what restart is there? It's just repeating the same mistakes!”

“In this regard, your understanding should be profound, fellow Daoist.”

At this point, the Innate True Person curled his lips in mockery: "With your talent, Dao heart, and comprehension, the position of True Lord should have been within your grasp."

"But what was the result?"

"How difficult was it for you to seek gold? You're even considered fortunate, having encountered that madwoman Xue Feihong, which left you with a sliver of hope."

As his words fell, Chong Guang was immediately reminded.

That was the day before he was abandoned, when Qingcheng Feixue True Lord decided to support Hong Yun's pursuit of gold instead. He was summoned before Qingcheng Feixue True Lord.

"You are of no use to me anymore; leave."

At that time, Qingcheng Feixue True Lord's expression was calm, and her tone was unperturbed: "From now on, you must rely on yourself. Each according to their abilities; you should understand."

"If you die, it only proves your incompetence."

"If you achieve success, I will call you 'fellow Daoist' in the future."

Thinking of this, Chong Guang couldn't help but shake his head and laugh, then affirmed the Innate True Person's words: "Indeed, being valued by a True Lord was my fortune."

The Innate True Person sneered upon hearing this:

"But even so, you still find it hard to achieve the true result. It shows that one or two individuals cannot change the general trend. This world has nearly become a stagnant pool!"

Even so, what do you intend to do, fellow Daoist?

Facing Chong Guang's inquiry, the Innate True Person sat upright and solemnly said: "I wish to reverse this trend and overthrow the sky above all the True Lords!"

"Impossible!" Chong Guang shook his head.

"Of course, not for the long term." The Innate True Person spoke solemnly: "But if only for a period, the current 【No Heaven】 is already sufficient."

".What?"

Seeing Chong Guang's surprised expression, the Innate True Person suddenly smiled: "Actually, 【No Heaven】 has a very special aspect, but no one has noticed."

"Or perhaps they noticed but didn't care."

"That is, 【No Heaven】 has no corresponding Dao foundation and cultivation method! Its foundation is entirely built upon other Foundation Establishment True Persons!"

"In other words, 【No Heaven】 itself does not cultivate Foundation Establishment True Persons to support it but instead plunders those who have cultivated other fruit positions, having them support itself. In this way, when 【No Heaven】 rises, other fruit positions will inevitably decline!"

Upon hearing this, Chong Guang was stunned.

He understood the Innate True Person's approach: that is, to use 【No Heaven】 to strip the Foundation Establishment under the world's True Lords, causing their fruit positions to fall!

Once successful, all the True Lords would be affected!

Because the lofty fruit positions also require the Foundation Establishment True Persons under them to support with their own Dao foundations. If there are too few Foundation Establishment True Persons, the fruit position will become hidden.

When the fruit position is hidden, it becomes difficult to verify.

And if there is still a True Lord in position on the hidden fruit position, then once the fruit position is hidden, even the True Lord will be constrained, making it difficult to interfere in the present world!

Even with the abilities of a True Lord, using their own cave heaven to re-support the fruit position to manifest is not something that can be done overnight.

And this period is the opportunity for all the True Lords!

A vast sea and sky, an opportunity for fish to leap!

However, correspondingly, the initiator of all this will inevitably be opposed by all the True Lords.

"Fellow Daoist, this is your fifth tribulation."

"Its name is: 【Competing for Freedom】 ."

As his words fell, the Innate True Person extended his hand, revealing a light sphere in his palm: “As long as you are willing, fellow Daoist, you can begin the tribulation now.”

“If you are afraid, it's not too late to leave now.”

“.”

Looking at the Innate True Person before him, Chong Guang rarely fell silent for a moment. Then he curled his lips, letting out a hearty laugh from between his teeth:

“Hahaha... good, good!”

“Mu Changsheng, what a Mu Changsheng!”

Before the laughter subsided, Chong Guang's expression turned resolute. He immediately grabbed the light sphere and refined it in an instant: “All beings compete for freedom under the frosty sky; what tribulation is there to speak of? This is precisely my opportunity to prove the Dao!”

Boom!

The next moment, heaven and earth underwent a drastic change.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 345 : Hong Yun: Why Is It Me Again?

[1,408 words]

Chapter 345: Hong Yun: Why Is It Me Again?

At first, it was just one person.

“My Taixu Divine Ability?”

This True Person was quite enthusiastic about the \[Heaven of Non-Existence], having already passed the first tribulation. However, the divine ability he obtained was the lowest grade, the \[White Bone Observation].

Nevertheless, passing the first tribulation was still enough to demonstrate his strength, at least showing some merit. There were countless True Persons like him across the

world, and at this moment, all of them harbored the same doubt, watching as their Sea of Consciousness radiated light, and the Taixu Divine Ability they had previously obtained blossomed with brilliance.

This change spread across the world at a speed visible to the naked eye.

How vast was the influence of the \[Heaven of Non-Existence]?

After all, it was a free divine ability. Although it didn't provide a rank, its cultivation difficulty was far less than other innate divine abilities. Who would mind having one more?

Therefore, even though it hadn't been around for long,

The divine abilities bestowed by the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] had already spread throughout the east, west, south, and north, even reaching overseas, with many True Persons cultivating them. It could be said to have swept across the world.

Thus, this anomaly was also sweeping across the world.

At the same time, in the north of the river, above the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, purple qi had long filled the sky, with several fruit-position stars radiating brilliant light, clashing head-on with the purple qi.

Just like the past pursuit of gold by Chong Guang.

However, in the next second, the group of True Lords who had been engaged in fierce battle suddenly stopped their actions. The fruit-position stars trembled, and they all sensed the anomaly in heaven and earth.

“What’s going on?”

“Something’s not right. Why is there a disturbance in the fruit positions?”

“Ang Xiao, what underhanded methods have you used again?”

On the other side, with purple qi surging, Ang Xiao's expression also changed at this moment because he discovered that this anomaly had actually affected him as well.

‘What’s happening? Who is scheming in the dark?’

Although he was habitually blamed, Ang Xiao was deeply scheming. He immediately went along with the situation, chuckled lightly, and said, “This has nothing to do with me.”

Denial was admission!

If Ang Xiao had remained silent, it would have been fine. But once he spoke, he was immediately labeled as the culprit of the anomaly by the True Lords of the world, and they were about to take action again.

On the contrary, the True Lord Qing Chen Feixue, who had just been at the forefront and the most aggressive against Ang Xiao, narrowed her eyes, seemingly having guessed something. Not only did she not make another move, but she also took the initiative to distance herself, carefully sensing the state of her fruit position, with a look of astonishment in her beautiful eyes.

‘Chong Guang.’

Boom!

In the next second, countless brilliant lights appeared above the firmament, the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] opened wide, revealing a figure sitting cross-legged, exuding sharpness.

“It’s the fruit position manifested by that Kong Zheng.”

“Mu Changsheng chose a good time. Compared to him, Ang Xiao is more important. Let’s keep him for now; dealing with this person later won’t hurt.”

“.Wait, something’s not right!”

At first, the True Lords were quite calm. After all, even if the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] was truly achieved, it would just be one more early-stage Golden Core True Lord.

Would it affect the overall situation of the world?

Yes, but not much.

Therefore, at first, no True Lord paid attention. However, soon, as the anomaly in the fruit position became more significant, some began to feel uneasy.

What exactly was going on?

Some True Lords even suspected their own Dao Lords, thinking they were up to something. Otherwise, how could it affect the changes in the fruit positions?

“Look down.”

In the next second, the manifested \[Heaven of Non-Existence] revealed Chong Guang's figure. His lips moved, and a calm yet powerful voice echoed:

“Residing high above, how long has it been since you all have looked directly at the world?”

In the fragment of the Heavenly Court in the Xuanling Realm, within the \[Southern Heavenly Gate].

Lü Yang's avatar sat cross-legged, quietly watching the figure before him. Not only him, but also the Yun Family Patriarch and True Person Xiu Xin saw the same figure.

Throughout the world, all cultivators who had passed through the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] and possessed the Taixu Divine Ability fell into a trance, as if their spirits were wandering the Taixu, arriving at the \[Heaven of Non-Existence], standing beside Chong Guang—one, ten, a hundred... forming an indescribable tide!

The tide rose and fell.

Under the support of this invisible tide, Chong Guang's figure became increasingly clear, with steps appearing beneath his feet. He calmly ascended step by step.

With each step he took, the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] rose higher.

As the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] rose, the True Lords of the world found their fruit positions sinking. In an instant, countless True Lords changed their expressions.

“So that’s how it is!”

This scene was also witnessed by Lü Yang and even Ancestor Ting You within the Myriad Spirits Banner. Especially Ancestor Ting You, whose expression was filled with indescribable astonishment and admiration.

“So that’s it. This is the second marvelous use of the 『Taixu Ritual Secret Art』 that I hadn’t deduced before—seizing the Dao foundations of the world. The Dao foundations that originally supported other fruit positions have been forcibly taken. The higher the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] rises, the lower the other fruit positions become!”

Ancestor Ting You's reaction was remarkably swift.

Mu Changsheng's scheme, and Chong Guang's current actions, were almost instantly deduced by him due to his understanding of the 『Taixu Ritual Secret Art』 .

At the same time, other True Lords also reacted.

‘You really succeeded.’

True Lord Qing Chen Feixue stood with her hands behind her back, her three thousand strands of black hair fluttering. Her beautiful and delicate face showed no trace of disappointment; instead, it bore a slight smile.

Unlike other early-stage Golden Core cultivators who were shocked and angry, her cultivation was extremely high, and her cave heaven remained intact. Her dependence on the fruit position had long been greatly reduced. Although she would be affected, it wouldn't cause any harm. On the contrary, because she vaguely guessed Chong Guang's plan, she showed an expression of excitement.

However, she was among the few.

“Stop!”

With a shout, heaven and earth changed instantly. A Buddhist light slowly rose—it was the True Lord from the Pure Land, the \[Bodhisattva of the Vase and Water Moon].

Her originally gentle face was now twisted with anger, revealing a wrathful expression. The white jade vase in her hand suddenly overturned and poured out.

“Boom!”

In an instant, rolling river water flowed out from the vase, rushing towards the direction of the \[Heaven of Non-Existence], obviously intending to stop Chong Guang's ascension.

However, Chong Guang didn't even glance at her.

He continued to ascend, and the attack launched by the \[Bodhisattva of the Vase and Water Moon] passed through the \[Heaven of Non-Existence] as if it were empty.

When falsehood is made real, the real becomes false; where there is non-being, there is being, and where there is being, there is non-being.

“What a fruit of illusion and reality. Perhaps not adept at combat, but mastering the changes between illusion and reality, it's unparalleled in the world for preserving life, rarely can anyone touch it.”

“He is seizing the True Persons under our rule.”

“What does he intend to do?”

Under the gaze of all, Chong Guang walked all the way to the highest step. By this moment, many True Lords' fruit positions had begun to become unstable.

Of course, this was not enough to affect the True Lords in position.

However, those not in position, still seeking the Golden Core, were unfortunate.

“No——!!!”

In the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Hong Yun stared dumbfounded at the \[Overturned Lamp Flame] above his head. It flickered once and then vanished from the world.

——Chong Guang had specifically targeted the \[Overturned Lamp Flame].

After all, he was a True Person of the Holy Sect, and bearing grudges was a basic trait. The \[Overturned Lamp Flame] had no True Lord in position, so it was naturally the first to retreat into the Bitter Sea.

‘Why is it me again!?’

At this moment, Hong Yun had many curses to utter. After all, he was really about to succeed! But at the last moment, the cooked duck suddenly flew away?

He was still seeking the Golden Core!

The blessed land that had just flown halfway suddenly lost its destination. How could it be maintained? In an instant, it collapsed and turned into nothingness!

“Boom!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 346 : A Tranquil Sixty Years of Heaven and Earth

[1,430 words]

Chapter 346: A Tranquil Sixty Years of Heaven and Earth

Accompanied by a deafening explosion, Hong Yun's body abruptly burst apart, revealing a soul enveloped in golden essence, utterly exasperated to the extreme.

Once again, he had failed!

Though he had grown accustomed to such outcomes over the past five thousand years, this attempt had held the most promise. Success had seemed imminent, yet he still failed to grasp it!

Unlike ordinary Foundation Establishment True Persons, Hong Yun, being the reincarnation of a True Lord, would not become a Dao calamity upon failing to attain gold. Instead, his soul would be protected by golden essence, guided by the Netherworld into reincarnation for another life. However, regaining his current cultivation would demand an immense amount of time.

'Chong Guang... Chong Guang!!!'

Hong Yun couldn't help but roar in his heart, his defenses shattered, allowing distracting thoughts to surge forth like an endless torrent of resentment.

Yet, he dared not linger.

Surrounded by so many True Lords, he was now merely a soul protected by golden essence. If he did not promptly respond to the Netherworld's summons, death was certain!

'...Go!'([The Journal of Hebrew Scriptures][1])

In the next moment, the Netherworld opened, and Hong Yun's figure vanished from the scene in a flash, too swift for anyone to capture his soul.

This was precisely why True Lords were so difficult to kill.

To completely eradicate a True Lord required at least three strikes: first, to destroy his cave heaven, causing him to fall from his position and lose the realm of a True Lord; second, to annihilate his soul, preventing him from entering the Netherworld and reincarnating; and third, to obliterate his golden essence, ensuring it could not attach to another entity and grant him a chance to revive.

Meanwhile, within the realm of Wu You Tian.

Unconcerned with Hong Yun's demise, Chong Guang stood quietly at the top of the steps, his lips moving as a fragrant aroma naturally wafted around him.

Within the scent, images of various women manifested.

These women, each with distinct appearances and attire, displayed expressions and movements captivating enough to stir the hearts of ordinary people, as if they were real beings.

"Essence of Myriad Flowers!"

The fragrance gradually transformed, giving rise to a misty sea that evoked emotions, causing all who witnessed it to recall their sorrows.

"Sea of Sorrow!"

With each divine ability Chong Guang manifested, Wu You Tian ascended higher, while other positions in the world diminished correspondingly.

Witnessing this, Ang Xiao hesitated not, extending his hand to retrieve a golden lamp emitting light from afar—none other than the treasure of the Great Forest Wood position, the Sun-Shielding Golden Lamp, which he had previously lent to Chong Guang. Simultaneously, a formidable force descended from the heavens.

"Boom!"([DDL][2])

In the Jiangnan Gantang Dao, within the cave heaven fragment, Chong Guang's physical body was mercilessly shattered by Ang Xiao, reduced to mere dust.

Yet—it was to no avail.

Ang Xiao's actions only elicited a calm glance from Chong Guang, who then continued to channel his magical power, unveiling another divine ability.

"Crossing the Bewildering Ferry."

As his words fell, the scene within Wu You Tian transformed once more.

The mist cleared, revealing a vast ocean, thousands of miles wide and deep beyond measure, with black waters flowing and roaring like thunder.

Golden Core True Lords could gaze upon this ocean without issue.

However, the Foundation Establishment True Persons below each saw within the ocean the recent obstacles hindering their cultivation, causing cold sweat to form unconsciously.

Nonetheless, some with steadfast Dao hearts and exceptional comprehension managed to cross the "Bewildering Ferry," breaking through their internal dilemmas, feeling refreshed and clear-minded. This indicated that Chong Guang did not intend to trouble them but deliberately used divine abilities to help them overcome their confusion.

However, would he bestow benefits without reason?

All those who gained from the "Crossing the Bewildering Ferry" had, in effect, been incorporated under the jurisdiction of the Wu You Tian position, severing ties with their original Dao lineages.

"Boom!"([DDL][2])

In the next instant, the light of a position star suddenly vanished. This position, unlike the Sun-Shielding Flame, was held by a Golden Core True Lord.

Yet now, it had hidden itself.

As the position concealed itself, the figure of the True Lord also dimmed rapidly, scattering like stardust, disappearing from the world within a single breath.

It was the Water Moon Bodhisattva of the Pure Land.

This True Lord, with shallow cultivation, had just acted against Chong Guang. Her position was deliberately targeted by him, making her the first to retreat from the world!

"So it is."

"Wu You Tian... such a grand scheme! Such ambition! And Chong Guang, I knew that such a significant event must be related to the Demon Sect."

"With the millennium catastrophe approaching, the world is about to descend into chaos once more."

"Perhaps chaos is preferable!"

For a moment, the reactions of the world's True Lords varied, but undoubtedly, they had all discerned the plans of Chong Guang and even Mu Changsheng.

Even Ang Xiao appeared slightly surprised: "You remain unaffected?"

He had already reclaimed the Sun-Shielding Golden Lamp; logically, Chong Guang should no longer have its protection and would need to contend with the consciousness of the Innate True Person.

Yet, that was not the case.

"Could I have misjudged?" At this thought, Ang Xiao's expression grew increasingly astonished: "Mu Changsheng truly willing to sacrifice himself for you?"

"Not just for me."

Chong Guang's expression remained calm: "This also fulfills himself. As long as I exist, with Wu You Tian hanging high, I will replace him as the target of all."

His voice began normally, but as he continued, echoes grew louder, transforming into an unending, continuous sound that stirred the deepest hatred in people's hearts—a hatred for all injustices in the world, an eternal resentment!

"Song of Everlasting Hatred!"

As long as evil persisted, this song would not cease. The flames of hatred ignited from the heart, consuming the body, capable of shattering the souls of True Persons.

"Lords, please follow me to the heavens."

Chong Guang clasped his hands in salute, his tone still humble. Yet at that moment, the four divine abilities he had previously manifested converged, merging into a crimson glow.

"Striving for Freedom!"

As his words fell, all sounds ceased.

Only when a crisp shattering sound rang out did the eerie silence break.

Crack!

Like a dream bubble bursting, yet another True Lord's form dissipated, their position vanished into seclusion—and this phenomenon rapidly began to spread to all the True Lords.

At this moment, the sky that had blanketed the land in gloom showed the first signs of fissures. One by one, the True Lords disappeared, and Chong Guang's figure grew increasingly faint, until finally it became nearly invisible, with only his grand voice echoing throughout the world:

"This Seat, Chong Guang, establishes Wu You Tian in Jiangnan."

"Refining the Cave Heaven of Morning True and Grand Void to ascend to True Lord, cutting off the connection between Heaven and Earth, preserving a sliver of hope for all cultivators under the heavens. May the world know peace for sixty years hence."

His voice resounded thunderously across heaven and earth.

When he finished speaking, only two True Lords remained at the scene—one was Ang Xiao, the other, the True Lord of Clear Snow and Flying Frost.

"..."

Ang Xiao gave no reply, only cast a deep glance at Chong Guang before dissipating his form willingly, leaving only the Clear Snow and Flying Frost True Lord.

"Chong Guang greets the True Lord."

As ever, Chong Guang performed a respectful salute, while the Clear Snow and Flying Frost True Lord shook her head upon seeing this. "Not lacking in ability. You have, after all, achieved a measure of success."

After speaking, her expression grew solemn, and she returned the salute:

"Xue Feihong greets fellow Daoist."

As her words fell, a gentle breeze swept by, and her figure, too, faded away from the spot, her position withdrawn from the world. Only Chong Guang remained standing.

However, this was but temporary.

When a position retreats into seclusion, it cannot interfere with the present world, but that did not mean True Lords could not strike at one another. It was easy to imagine what kind of universal hostility he would face in the future.

Hence, he needed allies.

'Relying on the illusory-real traits of Wu You Tian, I can delay at most for sixty years. Only if someone ascends to True Lord within this sixty-year span can this tribulation be considered overcome.'

'I just don't know what kind of world this will become afterward.'

'It shall be... an era of great contention!'

Chong Guang closed his eyes, and his figure vanished accordingly.

From this moment on, there were no more True Lords involved in the affairs of the world.

After a brief moment of silence, in Jiangdong, Jiangxi, Jiangbei, Jiangnan, and across the seas... long-suppressed auras that dared not reveal themselves previously began to rise into the air!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 347 : Soul Division and Reincarnation, A Probe into the Netherworld

[1,335 words]

Chapter 347: Soul Division and Reincarnation, A Probe into the Netherworld

Jiangnan, Sword-Hiding Villa.

"A good era is coming."

At this moment, Lü Yang's Immortal Spirit main body was gazing into the distance, sensing the eruption of various Qi forces. Chong Guang's actions were akin to igniting a powder keg!

Under the watchful eyes of True Lords, almost all Foundation Establishment Real Persons were shackled, especially those at the peak of Foundation Establishment. They were constantly monitored by the world's True Lords, making any significant movement ripple throughout the realm. Truly, those with a chance to pursue the Golden Core were exceedingly rare—merely more efficient tools.

They were even less free than late-stage Foundation Establishment Real Persons!

However, things were different now.

"Sixty years without a True Lord may not seem long, but even for late-stage Foundation Establishment Real Persons, this time is more than sufficient."

"Unfortunately, it has little to do with me."

Lü Yang was self-aware. He didn't expect to achieve the Golden Core in sixty years, but he believed reaching the peak of Foundation Establishment was within reach.

"I currently possess [Geng Metal] and [Shen Metal]."

"The next level, [Xin Metal], is in the hands of Uncle-Master Chong Guang. I should have the opportunity to obtain it later. That would make three of the Heavenly Gang Earth Fiends!"

If he could find [You Metal] to complete the four,

As an Immortal Spirit, he would achieve perfection!

At that time, as long as he comprehended his innate divine ability, he could immediately emerge to pursue the Golden Core!

"Even if it costs my life, I would willingly do it, as I can bring all my cultivation back using the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes. No matter how I look at it, it's a great deal."

Because the [Heavenly Firmament's Universal Manifestation Dharma Body] was both a divine ability and a spiritual treasure, possessing the characteristics of both.

And the cultivation option of the [Book of a Hundred Lifetimes] included the divine abilities cultivated!

'In other words, if I choose cultivation, I can bring the [Heavenly Firmament's Universal Manifestation Dharma Body] along without worrying about wasting it!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang became invigorated.

"Finally, an opportunity has arisen."

Immediately, Lü Yang glanced at Ancestor Ting You, who was still calculating something with her fingers, evidently still immersed in Chong Guang's previous actions.

"..."

To be honest, Lü Yang didn't feel much about this.

Of course, he was grateful for Chong Guang's actions, but whether it was Chong Guang or Mu Changsheng, their goals and ambitions were too lofty.

Too distant from him.

'Perhaps only prodigies like Ancestor can resonate with them. Unfortunately, compared to grand ambitions, I care more about daily necessities.'

For Lü Yang, he just wanted to progress step by step.

At any cost, to reach the pinnacle!

Therefore, compared to Chong Guang and Mu Changsheng, the one he resonated with the most was Suo Huan... Those struggling to survive had no mind for grand ambitions.

"Hu."

Putting aside many distracting thoughts, Lü Yang stopped overthinking and reactivated the [Puppet on Strings], redirecting his gaze to his avatar within the [Southern Heavenly Gate].

With the True Lords hidden from the world, the immense power previously exerted on the [Southern Heavenly Gate] dissipated. No longer isolated from the outside, Lü Yang could now commit suicide.

"Pu!"

In the next second, Lü Yang manipulated his avatar, shattering his internal organs. His body became covered in cracks, turning into a bloody figure in an instant—utterly miserable.

After completing all this, he left the [Southern Heavenly Gate] with Ancestor Yun and Real Person Xiu Xin.

Outside the [Southern Heavenly Gate], Daoist Dangmo's gaze immediately fell on Lü Yang. His eyes first showed confusion, then anger:

"Why are there only three of you?"

Lü Yang didn't let his avatar respond; instead, Real Person Xiu Xin beside him spoke: "Senior Sister Ye was killed by the Demon Sect's Mending Heaven Peak Master. The other Real Persons are scattered..."

Before her words fell, the [Southern Heavenly Gate] trembled again.

Soon, several streams of light flew out—Real Persons from the Sword Pavilion who had escaped after Ye Guyue's death, deliberately released by Lü Yang.

Now, it was perfect.

With their accounts, Ye Guyue's death was immediately confirmed: killed by the Demon Sect's Mending Heaven Peak Master, witnessed by all, leaving no doubt.

Seeing this, Daoist Dangmo could only sigh and looked at Lü Yang kindly: "The Demon Sect is powerful. It's already commendable that you survived. This defeat at the [Southern Heavenly Gate] is my responsibility. I will plead guilty upon return. For now, come back to the Sword Pavilion with me to recuperate."

"Real Person, that's not accurate!"

Lü Yang still didn't speak, but Ancestor Yun beside him did: "How can this be considered a defeat for our Sword Pavilion? It should be a great victory!"

Upon hearing this, everyone fell silent.

Daoist Dangmo was slightly stunned, then his eyes sparkled: "Fellow Daoist Yun means..."

"Ahem, ahem, ahem."

At this moment, Lü Yang finally spoke, trembling as he took out a storage pouch. With a gentle shake, a dazzling array of treasures spilled out.

Seeing this, Daoist Dangmo was first stunned, then smiled with relief: "Good!"

Lü Yang cupped his hands and said weakly: "The Mending Heaven Peak Master who killed Senior Sister Ye has already died by my hand, avenging her."

"Unfortunately, I only managed to retrieve this much spiritual material from the [Southern Heavenly Gate]..."

He understood the principle of first suppressing and then elevating. If he had presented all these gains initially, a detailed count would reveal that much was missing—only about thirty percent. But if he first let everyone believe there was nothing, then presented the gains, the effect would be entirely different.

Coupled with his near-death appearance, who could question him?

What? Seventy percent of the spiritual materials are missing?

Having thirty percent is already commendable! What? Do you suspect I embezzled them?

"You've worked hard!" Daoist Dangmo grasped Lü Yang's hand.

Seeing this, Lü Yang quickly seized the opportunity: "Senior... I did not disgrace my mission. Though I'm exhausted, I have contributed to the Sword Pavilion."

"Just wish to be reborn into the Sword Pavilion in my next life and obtain a share of Dao fate."

Lü Yang spoke with genuine emotion, moving Daoist Dangmo. After a long while, he said softly: "If you don't want to die, why don't I kill you?"

Lü Yang: "???"

"That's unnecessary!"

Fearing that Daoist Dangmo might strike, Lü Yang quickly declined: "I aspire to the Great Dao and only wish to join the Sword Pavilion. Please grant my wish, Senior."

"...Alright, I promise you."

Daoist Dangmo said solemnly: "After your reincarnation, I will personally guide you, accept you as my disciple. From then on, you will be a true disciple of our Sword Pavilion."

'Is there such a good thing!?'

Lü Yang was overjoyed, recalling his encounters with [Ang Xiao], barely suppressing the urge to smile.

"Then... thank you, Senior."

Before his words fell, Lü Yang couldn't wait to tilt his head.

The [Netherworld] opened!

Through the perspective of his split soul, Lü Yang saw the Netherworld for the first time—a pitch-black gate visible only to the souls of the deceased.

'Finally, I can officially cleanse myself and join the Sword Pavilion!'

'[Xin Metal] is already secured. The last [You Metal] might be within the Sword Pavilion. I've long desired their cultivation methods.'

Besides that, there was another goal Lü Yang was interested in:

'...Exploring reincarnation!'

Ordinary souls entering reincarnation are muddled and unaware. Even split souls lose contact with the main body, let alone remote control.

However, Lü Yang was different.

He could control his split soul's actions through the [Puppet on Strings], directly observing the scenes of reincarnation!

'Planning ahead.'

'After all, [Ang Xiao] is scheming for the Netherworld. If he can do it, why can't I? I'll explore first. When I reach the Golden Core, I might replace him.'

Many thoughts flashed through Lü Yang's mind.

In the next second, as the split soul drifted into the [Netherworld], he felt a slight darkness before finding himself in a gloomy hall.

Before him were a pair of scrutinizing eyes.

'...Hmm?'

Through the [Puppet on Strings], Lü Yang saw a figure shrouded in mist, revealing only a pair of eyes, suddenly approaching.

In those eyes, blue and white intertwined.

As the light flowed, Lü Yang could clearly see his split soul reflected in those eyes, less than an inch away.

"...Fellow Daoist?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 348 : Reverse Slaying of the Golden Core True Lord!

[1,268 words]

Chapter 348: Reverse Slaying of the Golden Core True Lord!

【Netherworld】 , an indescribable place.

Majestic palaces stood amidst the void, with countless souls flowing past the gates of the palace, all observed by the figure within.

“Heh heh.”

Suddenly, Ang Xiao let out a light chuckle.

Almost simultaneously, a kaleidoscope of colors emanated from his body, gradually seeping into the river of souls before him, gently brushing over each soul.

—Nothing happened.

The unexpected result caused Ang Xiao's brows to furrow slightly, but he quickly returned to normal: “Daoist Hong Yun, why hide and not dare to meet me?”

He had just sensed a gaze upon him.

Who was watching him?

The answer was self-evident; after all, only a True Lord could maintain consciousness within the Netherworld. Besides the recently reincarnated Hong Yun, who else could it be?

Thinking of this, Ang Xiao looked at the river of souls before him, his fingers twitching slightly before he reluctantly lowered his hand, not daring to truly touch the souls entering the Netherworld. This would shake the very foundation of the Netherworld—a grave taboo. He was not yet the Lord of the Netherworld; the cost was too great.

‘A lesson learned the hard way.’

Ang Xiao sighed: “Back then, I clearly obscured that part of your memory, Daoist, yet as time passed, you still remembered.”

Moments later, a voice filled with hatred finally rang out:

“Ang Xiao!”

Within the river of souls, a golden light suddenly appeared, revealing a soul with a vivid and ferocious expression: “You despicable scoundrel!”

Ang Xiao was right; he had indeed remembered everything.

It was precisely because he recalled the past that he now cursed so vehemently. The trap he fell into in his previous life was truly suffocating.

“You beast... you actually hid at the entrance of the Netherworld!”

In this way, all souls in the world, before reincarnation, had to pass by his gaze—even the reincarnation of a True Lord was no exception!

“Five thousand years ago, when I had just died and was preparing for reincarnation, it was because of this that you ambushed me!”

Back then, the Netherworld was far less terrifying than it was now.

Thus, Ang Xiao withstood the pressure of the Netherworld, at the cost of severe injury, to launch a surprise attack on him, who was caught off guard in the cycle of reincarnation.

His memory was also stripped away by Ang Xiao at that time.

“If not for the protection of the Netherworld, which prevented you from directly destroying my soul and only allowed you to tamper with my memory, I would have perished then!”

“You beast!”

Facing Hong Yun's angry rebuke, Ang Xiao remained indifferent, even showing a hint of regret.

The successful ambush five thousand years ago was due to Hong Yun's complete lack of defense. Now that Hong Yun was prepared, another ambush would not be so easy.

Moreover, the Netherworld had grown stronger.

Not to mention the impending millennial catastrophe and his exposed identity, he was forced to emerge from the shadows. He could no longer afford the same cost.

“.Forget it.”

With this thought, Ang Xiao withdrew the kaleidoscope of colors surrounding him, no longer paying attention to Hong Yun's scolding, and instead closed his eyes to continue pondering:

‘However... something still feels off.’

‘No matter what, Hong Yun is a True Lord. With his cultivation, if he intended to hide, I shouldn't have been able to detect his gaze within the Netherworld.’

‘A gaze I can detect must come from someone of a different realm...’

‘...Wait, that's not right!’

In an instant, Ang Xiao's eyes snapped open: “It wasn't Hong Yun's gaze? It was someone else? Could it be that mysterious little friend watching me?”

That being said, the number of souls entering the Netherworld was vast. Even with Ang Xiao's abilities, it was impossible to locate that particular tributary again, let alone identify the little friend who had glanced at him. However, why did the other party suddenly come to the Netherworld?

Thinking of this, a shadow appeared in Ang Xiao's eyes.

‘Unfortunately, due to Chong Guang and that **【Realm of Nonexistence】**, I am now unable to leave the Netherworld. In sixty years, how many twists and turns will arise?’

At this point, even he had to admit:

‘The great trend of the world is no longer in my hands.’

“Damn, that scared me to death!”

Amidst the torrent of souls, Lü Yang's split soul finally let out a sigh of relief: "That old thief Ang Xiao is too sinister! Just how many hidden cards does he have?"

"Like a ghost!"

Although it wasn't their first encounter, Lü Yang was still so frightened that he almost severed the 【Puppet Strings】 , fearing that he would be traced and caught.

However, it wasn't without unexpected gains.

Through the 【Puppet Strings】 , Lü Yang's vision locked onto a particular soul, surrounded by golden light, clear and unclouded.

'Hong Yun!'

If not for Ang Xiao, he might not have discovered this reincarnated True Lord.

Lü Yang maneuvered his split soul closer to Daoist Hong Yun's soul, not daring to look too much, fearing detection. Yet, a fiery excitement involuntarily rose in his heart: 'Even a Golden Core True Lord, upon reincarnation, can obscure causality, but they definitely don't carry much power with them.'

A once-in-a-lifetime opportunity!

The golden essence of a reincarnated True Lord—its value far surpassed that of Suo Huan and Chong Guang, who, strictly speaking, hadn't even broken through yet.

His heart ablaze, Lü Yang's thoughts grew increasingly calm.

"Boom!"

Finally, another gate of the Netherworld opened. Lü Yang saw Hong Yun's soul gently float up and, with a flash, enter the portal.

Having long been prepared, Lü Yang followed closely, seizing the moment before the portal closed to slip in as well!

Northern Frontier, Yan City, Yan Family.

Accompanied by the high-pitched cries of a newborn, Hong Yun opened his eyes, and the soul of the Golden Core True Lord surged with countless thoughts.

'Ang Xiao... I won't let this go!'

Although he had failed to form his golden core again, Hong Yun had already adjusted his mindset: 'Strictly speaking, I still have a significant advantage in this life!'

'Chong Guang... though detestable, has done one good deed.'

"The disappearance of all True Lords means no one can stop me from forming my golden core. As for the seclusion of the 【Extinguished Lamp Flame】 , it's not an unsolvable issue."

After all, Hong Yun was once an incumbent True Lord. For other Foundation Establishment peak Real Persons, the hidden status of the fruit position would make forming the golden core extremely difficult, but for Hong Yun, he had his methods: 'The most direct is to orchestrate a massacre, destroying a wonder to serve as resources for forming the golden core.'

Soon, Hong Yun had devised a plan for this life.

'The immediate priority is to restore my Foundation Establishment cultivation, which should only take a few hours...'

At this moment, Hong Yun suddenly felt a strange sensation beside him. Turning his head, a pair of eyes met his gaze.

Beside him lay another infant.

Only then did Hong Yun realize that in this reincarnation, he had a twin brother. However, the way the other looked at him seemed... off...

'...Not good!'

Years of intuition made Hong Yun suddenly alert: Damn, there might be a beast!

But it was too late.

The next second, he saw his blood-related brother in this life, an innocent and adorable infant, suddenly reveal a somewhat perverse smile.

"Eh heh heh."

Before Hong Yun could react, Lü Yang's true body had already torn through the void, descending from the sky, and grabbed Hong Yun's newly reincarnated body!

'This is my greatest harvest to date!'

'Today, I shall challenge beyond my level, using my mid-Foundation Establishment stage to reverse slay a Golden Core True Lord!'

Creating an unprecedented feat!

Hong Yun: “???”

The next moment, Hong Yun's soul was extracted by Lü Yang, and then the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , like a wolf smelling meat, pounced directly!

Instantly refined!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 349 : From Now On, I Am Hong Yun!

[1,291 words]

Chapter 349: From Now On, I Am Hong Yun!

【Currently settling the experiences for “Hong Yun.”】

【You are a naturally born bearer of great fortune, favored by heaven and earth. Cultivation comes to you as effortlessly as eating and drinking, presenting no difficulty whatsoever.】

“.It actually succeeded.”

Seeing that Hong Yun had been completely captured by the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , Lü Yang finally breathed a sigh of relief, realizing that this reincarnated Golden Core True Lord had indeed fallen into his trap.

‘Throughout history, I might be the first to achieve this.’

A True Lord's reincarnation, cleansed of all traces through the cycle of reincarnation via the 【Netherworld】 , could obscure all cause and effect, making it impossible for anyone to deduce. Theoretically, it was flawless.

Yet, he encountered a freak like Lü Yang, who didn't bother with deductions but instead followed through reincarnation, tailing and ambushing. Such tactics were beyond even 【Ang Xiao】 , as no one else could keep a split soul conscious during reincarnation.

‘This time, the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes has truly feasted.’

Lü Yang stared intently at the soul of Hong Yun before him, observing the golden light flowing throughout his body, being voraciously devoured by the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 .

This golden light appeared ordinary.

However, when Lü Yang truly focused on it, he couldn't suppress a trace of desire, involuntarily swallowing:

'Golden Nature! True Lord's Golden Nature!'

'Unlike a perfected Foundation Establishment, a True Lord's Golden Nature is completely fused with the soul, intertwined with life itself. The Golden Nature is the soul; the soul is the Golden Nature!'

The more he observed that golden light, the more he sensed its profundity. It embodied Hong Yun's lifelong cultivation. Merely inhaling its aura could evoke continuous insights in the mind—reflections of Hong Yun's understanding of heaven, earth, and the Great Dao.

'No, I must resist!'

In the next moment, Lü Yang abruptly suppressed all emotions, stepping back with a hint of apprehension in his eyes:

'What a truly sinister thing!'

Golden Nature isn't something just anyone can consume.

Especially the Golden Nature of a Golden Core True Lord—it is the essence of their soul. While consuming it can enhance one's Dao cultivation, it also risks gradual assimilation.

In the end, who knows whether you refine the Golden Nature,

or the Golden Nature assimilates you?

'This isn't something a lower cultivator should covet.'

'Perhaps only a Golden Core True Lord with higher cultivation and Dao attainment could consume this Golden Nature—for instance, the Qing Cheng Fei Xue True Lord from my previous life.'

'But fortunately...'

Lü Yang's gaze gradually calmed. No matter how formidable the True Lord's Golden Nature was, it was like striking a stone with an egg when faced with the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 —utterly incomparable.

“Boom!”

Finally, accompanied by a radiant light, the interface of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 suddenly displayed Hong Yun's densely packed life trajectory.

Meanwhile, Hong Yun's soul floated emptily in the air, all thoughts and emotions seemingly never having existed, completely vanished, leaving only an empty shell. Seeing this, Lü Yang didn't dare to delay. He unfurled the Myriad Spirits Banner, collecting it, then broke through the void and disappeared from the spot.

Simultaneously, Lü Yang didn't forget to examine Hong Yun's experiences.

‘Hong Yun, Hong Yun—no wonder he bears this name. The first half of this True Lord's life can only be described as “immense fortune”!’

A naturally born bearer of great fortune.

‘In a sense, he's quite similar to the Innate True Person, both favored by heaven and earth. However, he's even luckier than the Innate True Person.’

‘Because he caught the last train to seek the Golden Core.’

Compared to the era of the Innate True Person Mu Changsheng, during Hong Yun's pursuit of the Golden Core, heaven and earth were far from rigid as they are now, still offering room for ascension.

‘However, compared to the first half, the latter half of Hong Yun's life was utterly disastrous. First, he was schemed against by 【Ang Xiao】 , losing a significant portion of his memories. Then, Uncle Master Chong Guang emerged, aiming to seize his position. In the previous life, he died at the hands of Qing Cheng Fei Xue True Lord; in this life, he was slain by me.’

Why did this happen?

‘The turning point was the millennial catastrophe five thousand years ago!’

A look of realization appeared in Lü Yang's eyes:

‘During that catastrophe, Hong Yun also gained benefits from the Heavenly Realm's conquest but didn't integrate them into his position.’

‘Instead, he merged them into his own cave heaven!’

This explains why the latter half of Hong Yun's life was so turbulent and unlucky, with nothing going right, and his former fortune vanished—the fundamental reason being:

—He deceived heaven!

'You were favored by heaven and earth, born with fortune and merit far surpassing others. It's fair to say that achieving True Lord status owed at least one-third to heaven's support. Yet, after ascending, you turned your back, keeping all benefits without sharing any with the heaven that supported you. It's no wonder heaven would retaliate!'

'However... this can't entirely be blamed on Hong Yun.'

Generally, heaven's constraints on True Lords are minimal. Even if Hong Yun turned his back, heaven would find it hard to significantly reduce his fortune and merit.

The problem lies with 【Ang Xiao】 .

Through a single scheme, 【Ang Xiao】 directly killed Hong Yun, providing heaven the opportunity to settle accounts with this “traitor.” The outcome was self-evident.

'Therefore, one must understand their position to maintain stability!'

If you sit in the wrong place, or occupy a position while coveting another, the result will be dissatisfaction from both sides, and any glory will be fleeting.

After reflecting, Lü Yang looked again at Hong Yun's soul.

The 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 didn't need to consume all the Golden Nature to settle experiences. Once satiated, it naturally left the leftovers for Lü Yang.

At this moment, Lü Yang's eyes gleamed with fervor:

'What a treasure! After being thoroughly cleansed by the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , Hong Yun's consciousness has completely dissipated, leaving only the soul and Golden Nature.'

By donning this empty shell, who could discern his true identity?

With a thought, Lü Yang enveloped his immortal spirit body with Hong Yun's shell. With it, he could even impersonate a True Lord!

'From now on, I am Hong Yun!'

After all, with the life experiences of Hong Yun settled by the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , he needn't worry about exposure. He could respond fluently to anyone.

Don't forget, Hong Ju is still alive!

This perfected Foundation Establishment Great True Person relies entirely on Hong Yun's Golden Nature to survive. Now that Hong Yun has been refined, Lü Yang could use this to deceive Hong Ju!

'And then there's that 【Same Fate Fortune Alteration Talisman Book】 ...'

Lü Yang had long coveted this fruit-position treasure of 【Overturned Lamp Flame】 .

'Moreover, with Hong Ju as my insider in the Primordial Saint Sect, I now have a channel to obtain the 【Xin Metal】 left behind by Uncle Master Chong Guang.'

However, these require careful planning.

For now, there's still a significant gain he hasn't accounted for.

“Innate Talent!”

Shifting his gaze, Lü Yang looked at the interface of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 , seeing that the data had finally been settled, transforming into golden light—

【You have obtained the golden innate talent: Fortune Divination Draw!】

【Fortune Divination Draw: Select a task, draw a fortune lot. Upon drawing, you receive corresponding fortune blessings, indicating the likelihood of success.】

【Great Fortune: Favored by heaven and earth, guaranteed success.】

【Minor Fortune: Fortune upon you, minor gains.】

【Lesser Fortune: Mixed blessings, outcome depends on effort.】

【Minor Misfortune: Misfortune looming, success is difficult.】

【Great Misfortune: Catastrophe imminent, death is certain!】

“Such an innate talent...”

Looking at the panel, Lü Yang was momentarily stunned, but soon understood from Hong Yun's life experiences why he developed such a talent.

“It's likely because, over the past five thousand years, he was so unlucky that he doubted life itself, with nothing going right, prompting him to seek a divination before undertaking anything.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 350 : Divining Fate and Drawing Lots, Mandating Destiny and Upholding Precepts

[1,388 words]

Chapter 350: Divining Fate and Drawing Lots, Mandating Destiny and Upholding Precepts

Jiangnan, Sword-Hiding Villa.

Lü Yang's celestial spirit body remained concealed within the stone sword. In front of him lay the page of the Mysterious Treasure 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 and a bamboo lot-drawing tube.

"Fortune, fortune, I want fortune!"

As Lü Yang widened his eyes, he saw the lot-drawing tube on the page of the Mysterious Treasure 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 shake slightly, and then three radiant lots spilled out.

Lü Yang focused his gaze and immediately showed a delighted expression.

【Event: The final step in cultivating the 『Scripture of Sensing the Mysterious Spirit's Response』】

【Minor Fortune: Although your comprehension is lacking, your condition today is excellent, and you soon overcome the final hurdle.】

【Least Fortune: Due to insufficient comprehension, you struggle for a long time at the last obstacle, but eventually, through persistence and determination, you grasp the key.】

【Minor Misfortune: Your talent is insufficient, and you fail to complete the cultivation.】

"A fortune appeared!"

Without hesitation, Lü Yang picked up the 【Minor Fortune】 lot. The other two lots dissipated instantly, while the 【Minor Fortune】 merged into his body.

After several months of experimentation, he had fully mastered the talent of 【Divining Fate and Drawing Lots】 .

‘First, this talent can't be used continuously; each use requires accumulating fortune in advance. Only when enough fortune is gathered can a draw be initiated.’

‘Moreover, the more fortune accumulated, the higher the probability of drawing a good lot.’

‘Second, these lots mostly serve as support; I can't rely on drawing lots to accomplish things that are theoretically impossible for me.’

For example, if he decided to challenge 【Ang Xiao】 in a duel now, even if he accumulated immense fortune, the lot drawn would still be 【Great Misfortune】 . Therefore, strictly speaking, this talent only reveals possible futures; the choice still rests with Lü Yang.

On the other hand, as long as it's something theoretically achievable for Lü Yang,

He could use the talent of 【Divining Fate and Drawing Lots】 to bypass the process and directly obtain the result, ensuring success!

"Too bad it's not Great Fortune."

Lü Yang showed a nostalgic expression. He could still recall the feedback he received more than two months ago when he accidentally drew a 【Great Fortune】 .

It truly felt like divine assistance!

During that period, he had been diligently cultivating the 『Scripture of Sensing the Mysterious Spirit's Response』 , a profound second-grade true technique developed by the Sword Pavilion for the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 .

This differed from the 【Heavenly Firmament's All-Encompassing Law Body】 , which only required resource investment. The former demanded some elusive comprehension.

Therefore, Lü Yang had repeatedly encountered obstacles while cultivating the 『Scripture of Sensing the Mysterious Spirit's Response』 .

However, on the day he drew a 【Great Fortune】 , his condition was unbelievably good, and he could easily solve any problem.

It was as if he were answering multiple-choice questions and guessing all the answers correctly.

At that moment, Lü Yang even had the illusion that his comprehension rivaled that of Ancestor Ting You, highlighting the exaggerated boost provided by a 【Great Fortune】 .

"Never mind, Minor Fortune isn't bad either."

Lü Yang collected his thoughts. He had already reached the final stage of the 『Scripture of Sensing the Mysterious Spirit's Response』 , and a 【Minor Fortune】 was sufficient to help him cross the threshold.

"Whoosh!"

With a thought, a flame appeared in Lü Yang's hand. This was the 【Six Ding Divine Fire】 , one of the three great treasures he obtained in the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 . He had secretly kept it upon leaving, specifically for gathering qi. By now, he had refined most of this fire seed.

"This 【Six Ding Divine Fire】 is a gentle flame."

"Rather than being a furnace fire used for alchemy or artifact refining, it's more like a fire of wisdom born from human thoughts, enhancing one's mental agility."

Soon, the fire seed was gradually absorbed by Lü Yang.

With the boost from 【Minor Fortune】 , Lü Yang had already grasped the successful outcome of his cultivation in advance, so he encountered almost no bottlenecks during the process.

Before long, a multicolored illusion appeared in his sea of consciousness.

"Somewhat resembles a divine ability."

Lü Yang looked at the illusion in his sea of consciousness. This was the result of completing the 『Scripture of Sensing the Mysterious Spirit's Response』 —something akin to a divine ability but not quite, resembling a spiritual treasure yet not exactly.

Its name was: 【Mandating Destiny and Upholding Precepts】 .

Through it, Lü Yang also learned the name of the fruit position in the Mysterious Spirit Realm: 【Controller of Fate】 , implying that all things in heaven and earth have their predetermined destinies.

In fact, the overall structure of the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 was precisely like this, with the heavenly court reigning supreme and the five immortals under its orderly governance.

However, since the heavenly court of the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 hadn't truly achieved total control over heaven and earth and the destinies of all beings, this fruit position likely still had room for growth.

Unfortunately, before that could happen, it was attacked by the Holy Sect.

As a result, the endeavor collapsed halfway through, and now the heavenly court is fragmented. The fruit position has fallen into this world, and it's only a matter of time before it's completely devoured.

As for 【Mandating Destiny and Upholding Precepts】 , it was a marvel derived from the 【Controller of Fate】 fruit position.

What does it mean to mandate destiny?

What does it mean to uphold precepts?

"The so-called mandating destiny is actually a method of weaving fortune, directing limited fortune towards a specific direction to maximize its effect."

"And upholding precepts is the method of restraining fortune."

"After mandating destiny, one must accept a precept. As long as the precept isn't violated, the blessing of the mandated destiny can be maintained. However, once the precept is broken, fortune will immediately backlash."

Similar methods also existed in the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 , though with different effects. Cultivators in the Mysterious Spirit Realm, although not subjected to the erosion of soul by the Bi Feng, faced the "Disaster of Dao Transformation," so they needed to uphold precepts to counteract it. This was one of the reasons for the strict immortal laws established in the 【Mysterious Spirit Realm】 .

"If I were to mandate destiny for myself..."

With a thought, the illusion in Lü Yang's sea of consciousness immediately reflected back, and he sensed a response. A look of surprise appeared in his eyes:

"...It should be the 【Pomegranate Wood Destiny】 !"

This was the destiny Lü Yang had annotated for himself.

"With this destiny's blessing, I can establish a connection with the 【Pomegranate Wood】 fruit position, which will greatly aid in awakening my innate divine ability and in future pursuits of gold!"

The only issue was the precept that needed to be strictly observed to maintain this destiny.

"From now on, I need to uphold the precept of chastity, absolutely refraining from self-restraint, and must engage in dual cultivation with others daily... This, this is too challenging for me!"

Lü Yang felt the feedback from 【Mandating Destiny and Upholding Precepts】 and showed a troubled expression.

Although he wasn't a lustful person, for the sake of cultivation, even if he was internally reluctant, he had to sacrifice his personal desires for the greater good!

Several thousand days later.

Lü Yang's true body awakened from meditation, opened his eyes, and then showed an expectant expression: "Finally, it's here... My long wait wasn't in vain!"

Daoist Dangmo had come!

This Foundation Establishment Realm grandmaster from the Sword Pavilion truly kept his promise, personally deducing karma and traveling thousands of miles to find the reincarnated soul of Lü Yang's split soul.

Coincidentally, the split soul was now eight years old.

During this period, Lü Yang hadn't been idle either, focusing on cultivation and digesting the gains from the 【Southern Heavenly Gate】 . His cultivation had reached the critical point.

"Mid-stage Foundation Establishment Realm, after 【Upholding the Law】 comes perfection!"

"The next step is to undergo the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation, thereby officially breaking through to the late-stage Foundation Establishment Realm! This is another major hurdle on the path of cultivation..."

Heavenly Thunder Tribulation!

The master of Mending Heaven Peak died during this, so it's not to be taken lightly. It's considered a life-and-death ordeal. For this reason, Lü Yang had already decided to make thorough preparations before attempting it. After all, he had come this far with great effort; it would be a huge loss to start over due to failing the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation.

"...Hmm?"

At this moment, Lü Yang suddenly raised an eyebrow, his consciousness focusing on the split soul, then he grinned: "Interesting, it seems the previous arrangements are taking effect."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.